

GLADYS L. TREADWAY
1104 KIMBERLY RD. Unit 403
BETTENDORF, IA 52722-4111
Phone (563) 355-2095
E-mail: gltreadway77@outlook.com

I wish to thank everyone who has sent me info on my Fuller family from my Mother's line. They intermarry with families have already done so may have to go to other family books for info.

I started doing genealogy in 1969 and all my grand parents were gone but had other members of their's could get info from. Otherwise I worked at the court house and library and cemeteries to find info that I could.

I with others spent many a week at the Ft. Wayne, IN library, Salt Lake City library, Madison, WI library and many hours at Columbia, MO library just about every year from when I started. There was 4 of us who went to Iowa City every month during the good weather but now one has moved, one has passed and the other can't get out any longer and no fun to go by your self. So decided it was time to stop. This was before the internet so didn't have that to rely on but was just as well as have found a lot of wrong info on the internet. (I can't say mine is all right either) As much of it was not able to be proven for sure so just had to go by what we could find. But if anyone has proof of what you find is wrong in any of my books I would appreciate knowing it. We know every one is not 100% right as no one is perfect, even in research. New Data June 2017-GLT

So hope these books will be appreciated and enjoyed as much as I had putting them together. But I think now is the time to turn them over to someone else to enjoy as I can't get to the libraries any longer and only the internet to rely on and that isn't as much fun as going to the places where your ancestor's walked themselves.

You will notice different address's but the one above is correct.

Compiled by Gladys (Lowe) Treadway 1969-2018

Pedigree Chart

Chart no. 2

Completed Ordinances:

- B Baptized
- E Endowed
- P Sealed to parents
- S Sealed to spouse
- C Children's ordinances

2 Willard Harlo Lowe

B: 21 May 1915
P: Yarrow, Adair Co., MO
M: 25 Apr 1934
P: Kirksville, Adair Co., MO
D: 4 Aug 1971
P: Bettendorf, Scott Co., IA

1 Gladys LaVon Lowe

B: 9 Apr 1935
P: Kirksville, Adair Co., MO
M: 9 Apr 1965
P: Davenport, Scott, IA
D:
P:

CWO-2 Charles L Treadway

(Spouse of no. 1)
1930-1998

3 Rovene Melvina Dyer

B: 4 Sep 1915
P: Kahoka, Clark Co., MO
D: 28 Mar 2012
P: Bettendorf, Scott Co. IA

4 Charles "Henry" Lowe

B: 6 May 1883
P: Nind, Adair Co., MO
M: 3 Mar 1903
P: Nind, Adair Co., MO
D: 2 Feb 1957
P: Kirksville, Adair Co., MO

5 Laura Alice Thompson

B: 6 Aug 1885
P: Gifford, Macon Co., MO
D: 28 Feb 1964
P: Kirksville, Adair Co., MO

Henry Sylvester Dyer

B: 3 Apr 1879
P: Fairmount, Clark Co., MO
M: 3 Feb 1904
P: Kahoka, Clark Co., MO
D: 22 Mar 1965
P: Kahoka, Clark Co., MO

7 Juda (NMN) Anderson

B: 26 Sep 1879
P: Wyaconda, Clark Co., MO
D: 5 Feb 1957
P: Kirksville, Adair Co., MO

8 Jesse Francis "Frank" Lowe

B: 6 Aug 1859
P: Greentop, Adair Co., MO
M: 11 May 1879
P: Adair Co., MO
D: 24 May 1928
P: Nind, Adair Co., MO

9 Rebecca Jane Munden

B: 16 Sep 1858
P: Greentop, Adair Co., MO
D: 16 Jan 1894
P: Adair Co., MO

10 Levi Douglas Thompson

B: 20 Nov 1851
P: Louisa Co., IA
M: 28 Jul 1872
P: Adair Co., MO
D: 27 Apr 1924
P: Gifford, Macon Co., MO

11 Mary Martha Billiter

B: 20 May 1854
P: Marshall Co., W. VA
D: 23 Jun 1904
P: Gifford, Macon Co., MO

12 Charles Hillory Dyer

B: 29 Oct 1843
P: Lanesville (nr), Harrison Co., IN
M: 9 Sep 1866
P: Lanesville, Harrison Co., IN
D: 16 May 1915
P: Wyaconda, Clark Co., MO

13 Melvina Boley

B: 26 Sep 1846
P: Lanesville, Harrison Co., IN
D: 6 Mar 1930
P: Wyaconda, Clark Co., MO

14 James Anderson

B: 4 Nov 1826
P: KY
M: 1 Mar 1860
P:
D: 28 Jun 1881
P: Luray, Clark Co., MO

15 Mary Elizabeth Richey

B: 31 Dec 1837
P: Jennings Co., IN
D: 19 Apr 1916
P: Luray, Clark Co., MO

16 J. "Hawley" Lowe

B: 24 May 1816
M: 20 May 1845
D: 8 Jan 1862

17 Rachel Mariah Russell

B: 23 Sep 1825
D: 11 Dec 1900

18 Francis Marion Munden

B: 27 Aug 1837
M: 4 Sep 1856
D: 7 May 1922

19 Elizabeth Miller

B: 10 Sep 1840
D: 22 May 1880

20 John Wesley Thompson SR.

B: 25 Jan 1824
M: 6 Apr 1843
D: 10 Mar 1892

21 Mary Harpole

B: 13 Jan 1819
D: 15 Dec 1898

22 Joseph C. Billiter

B: 1824/1827
M: Jun 1848
D: Abt Dec 1886

23 Lucinda Greathouse

B: Abt 1832
D: Bef 1900

24 William Birchfield Dyer

B: 6 Jul 1819
M: 25 Feb 1841
D: 27 Jan 1863

25 Sarah Elizabeth Hurn

B: 9 Apr 1825
D: 9 Nov 1913

26 Nicholas Boley

B: 15 May 1815
M: 6 Mar 1838
D: 17 Jul 1858

27 Sarah LaHue

B: 10 Mar 1822
D: 16 Nov 1856

28

B:
M:
D:

29

B:
D:

30 Thomas C. Richey JR

B: 1 Dec 1804
M: 23 Dec 1829
D: 29 Sep 1872

31 Francis (Fanny) Fitzgerald

B: 19 Apr 1814
D: 19 Sep 1879

Prepared by
Gladys LaVon (Lowe) Treadway
1104 Kimberly Rd. Unit # 403
Bettendorf, IA 52722-4111

Scott

Telephone
(563) 355-2095

Date prepared
17 Jun 2018

Pedigree Chart

Chart no. 2

Completed Ordinances:

- B** Baptized
- E** Endowed
- P** Sealed to parents
- S** Sealed to spouse
- C** Children's ordinances

2 Thomas C. Richey SR

B: Abt 1777
P: VA
M: Abt 1802
P: Lincoln/Pulaski, KY
D: Bef 23 Apr 1869
P: Jennings Co., IN

1 Thomas C. Richey JR

B: 1 Dec 1804
P: Pulaski Co., KY
M: 23 Dec 1829
P: Vernon, Jennings Co., IN
D: 29 Sep 1872
P: Peaksville, Clark Co., MO

Francis (Fanny) Fitzgerald 6 Isaiah Blackford

(Spouse of no. 1)

B: 21 Oct 1748
P: Piscataway, Middlesex Co., NJ
M: Abt 1771
P: Piscataway?, Middlesex Co., NJ
D: 4 Feb 1809
P: Woodford Co., KY

3 Mary Bonnell Blackford

B: 3 Jun 1772
P: Essex Co., NJ
D: 28 Sep 1857
P: Jennings Co., IN

7 Abigail Bonnell

B: 2 Oct 1754
P: NJ
D: 7 Apr 1839
P: Madison, Jefferson Co., IN

14 James Bonnell

B: 1710
P: Elizabethtown, EUC, NJ
M: Abt 1730
P: Elizabethtown, EUC, NJ
D: 27 Sep 1788
P: Scotch Plains, Essex Co., NJ

15 Sarah Broadwell

B: 1715
P: Elizabethtown, EUC, NJ
D: 14 May 1791
P: Scotch Plains, Essex Co., NJ

12 John Blackford

B: 23 Feb 1713
P: Piscataway, Middlesex Co., NJ
M: 1740
P: Piscataway?, Middlesex Co., NJ
D: 26 Jul 1786
P: Essex Co., NJ

13 Hannah Martin

B: 29 Mar 1718
P: Piscataway, Middlesex Co., NJ
D: 21 May 1784
P: Scotch Plains, Essex Co., NJ

16

B:
M:
D:

8

B:
P:
M:
P:
D:
P:

17

B:
D:

9

B:
P:
D:
P:

18

B:
M:
D:

19

B:
D:

20

B:
M:
D:

21

B:
D:

22

B:
M:
D:

23

B:
D:

24 John Blackford

B: Abt 1687
M: Abt 1710
D: 18 Mar 1749

25 Ruth Sutton

B:
D:

26 Benjamin Martin Jr.

B: 14 Nov 1685
M: 1707
D: 3 May 1757

27 Philerato Slater *

B: 23 Feb 1690
D: Aft 1757

28 Nathaniel Bonnell

B: Abt 1670
M: Abt 1690
D: 4 Sep 1736

29 Mary Searing

B: Abt 1672
D:

30 Richard Broadwell

B: Abt 1687
M: Abt 1712
D: Abt 19 Jul 1732

31 Hannah Bonnell

B: Abt 1694
D: Bef Jul 1732

Prepared by
 Gladys LaVon (Lowe) Treadway
 1104 Kimberly Rd. Unit # 403
 Bettendorf, IA 52722-4111

Scott

Telephone
 (563) 355-2095

Date prepared
 30 May 2018

Pedigree Chart

Chart no. 3

Completed Ordinances:

- B Baptized
- E Endowed
- P Sealed to parents
- S Sealed to spouse
- C Children's ordinances

2 Edward Slater

B: Abt 1644
P: of Piscataway, MC, NJ
M: 9 Mar 1684
P: Piscataway, Middlesex Co., NJ
D: 28 Jan 1702
P: Piscataway, Middlesex Co., NJ

1 Philerato Slater *

B: 23 Feb 1690
P: Piscataway, Middlesex Co., NJ
M: 1707
P: Piscataway?, Middlesex Co., NJ
D: Aft 1757
P: , NJ

Benjamin Martin Jr.

(Spouse of no. 1)

3 Elizabeth Bonham *

B: 16 Feb 1665
P: Bonhamtown, Middlesex Co., NJ
D: 1732
P: Piscataway, Middlesex Co., NJ

4 (male) Slater

B:
P:
M:
P:
D:
P:

5 (female) ?Unknown

B:
P:
D:
P:

6 Nicholas Bonham *

B: 1630
P: Essex Co., ENGLAND
M: 1 Jul 1658
P: Barnstable, Barnstable Co., MA
D: 20 Jul 1684
P: Bonhamtown, Middlesex Co., NJ

7 Hannah Fuller

B: 1636
P: Scituate, Plymouth Co., MA
D: 30 Oct 1688
P: Piscataway, Middlesex Co., NJ

8

B:
P:
M:
P:
D:
P:

9

B:
P:
D:
P:

10

B:
P:
M:
P:
D:
P:

11

B:
P:
D:
P:

12 George Bonham

B: 1604/1609
P: , ENGLAND
M: Abt 1629
P: , ENGLAND
D: 28 Apr 1704
P: Plymouth, Plymouth Co., MA

13 (female) Bishop

B:
P: , ENGLAND
D: Bef 1644
P:

14 Samuel Fuller *

B: 1609/1612
P: Redenhall, Norfolk, ENGLAND
M: 8 Apr 1635
P: Scituate, Plymouth Co., MA
D: 10 Nov 1683
P: Barnstable, Barnstable Co., MA

15 Jane Lathrop *

B: Sep 1614
P: Egerton, Kent, ENGLAND
D: Sep 1614
P: Barnstable, Barnstable Co., MA
D: Sep 1614
P: Barnstable, Barnstable Co., MA

16

B:
M:
D:

17

B:
D:

18

B:
M:
D:

19

B:
D:

20

B:
M:
D:

21

B:
D:

22

B:
M:
D:

23

B:
D:

24 William Bonham

B:
M:
D:

25

B:
D:

26

B:
M:
D:

27

B:
D:

28 Edward Fuller *

B: 1575
M: Bef 1603
D: Jan 1621

29 Ann ?Unknown

B: Abt 1581
D: Aft Jan 1621

30 John Lathrop Rev. *

B: 1584
M: 16 Oct 1610
D: 18 Nov 1653

31 Hannah (House) Howse

B: 5 May 1594
D: 16 Feb 1633

31 Hannah (House) Howse

B: 5 May 1594
D: 16 Feb 1633

Prepared by
Gladys LaVon (Lowe) Treadway
1104 Kimberly Rd. Unit # 403
Bettendorf, IA 52722-4111

Scott
1104 Kimberly Rd. Unit # 403
Bettendorf, IA 52722-4111

Telephone (563) 355-3005 Date prepared 20 May 2018

Scott
Telephone (563) 355-3005 Date prepared 20 May 2018

Pedigree Chart

Chart no. 4

Completed Ordinances:

- B Baptized
- E Endowed
- P Sealed to parents
- S Sealed to spouse
- C Children's ordinances

2 Robert Fuller *

B: Abt 1547
P: of Redenhall, Norfolk, ENGLAND
M: 29 Jan 1572
P: Starston, ENGLAND
D: 23 May 1614
P: Rednehall, Norfolk, ENGLAND

1 Edward Fuller *

B: 1575
P: Redenhall, Norfolk, ENGLAND
M: Bef 1603
P: ?Redenhall, Norfolk, ENGLAND
D: Jan 1621
P: Plymouth, Plymouth Co., MA

Ann ?Unknown

(Spouse of no. 1)

3 Sarah Dunkhorn

B: Abt 1550
P: ENGLAND
D: Bef 1584
P: ENGLAND

4 John Fuller SR. *

B: 1500/1518
P:
M:
P:
D: 3 May 1558/1559
P: ENGLAND

5 Ann Collinge?

B: Abt 1514
P: Redenhall, Norfolk, England
D:
P:

8 *

B: Abt 1483
P: Redenhall, Norfolk, England
M:
P:

9 (female) ?Unknown

B:
P:
D:
P:

10

B:
P:
M:
P:
D:
P:

11

B:
P:
D:
P:

12

B:
P:
M:
P:
D:
P:

13

B:
P:
D:
P:

14

B:
P:
M:
P:
D:
P:

15

B:
P:
D:
P:

16 John Fuller *

B: Abt 1460
M:
D: Bef 17 May 1511

17 Alice? ?Unknown

B:
D:

18

B:
M:
D:

19

B:
D:

20

B:
M:
D:

21

B:
D:

22

B:
M:
D:

23

B:
D:

24

B:
M:
D:

25

B:
D:

26

B:
M:
D:

27

B:
D:

28

B:
M:
D:

29

B:
D:

30

B:
M:
D:

31

B:
D:

Prepared by
Gladys LaVon (Lowe) Treadway
1104 Kimberly Rd. Unit # 403
Bettendorf, IA 52722-4111

Scott

Telephone
(563) 355-2095

Date prepared
30 May 2018

Pedigree Chart

Chart no. 5

Completed Ordinances:

- B Baptized
- E Endowed
- P Sealed to parents
- S Sealed to spouse
- C Children's ordinances

2 William Fuller *

B: Abt 1423/1430
P: Norfolk Co., ENGLAND
M:
P:
D:
P:

1 John Fuller *

B: Abt 1460
P: Redenhall, Norfolk, England
M:
P:
D: Bef 17 May 1511
P: England

Alice? ?Unknown

(Spouse of no. 1)

3 (female) ?Unknown

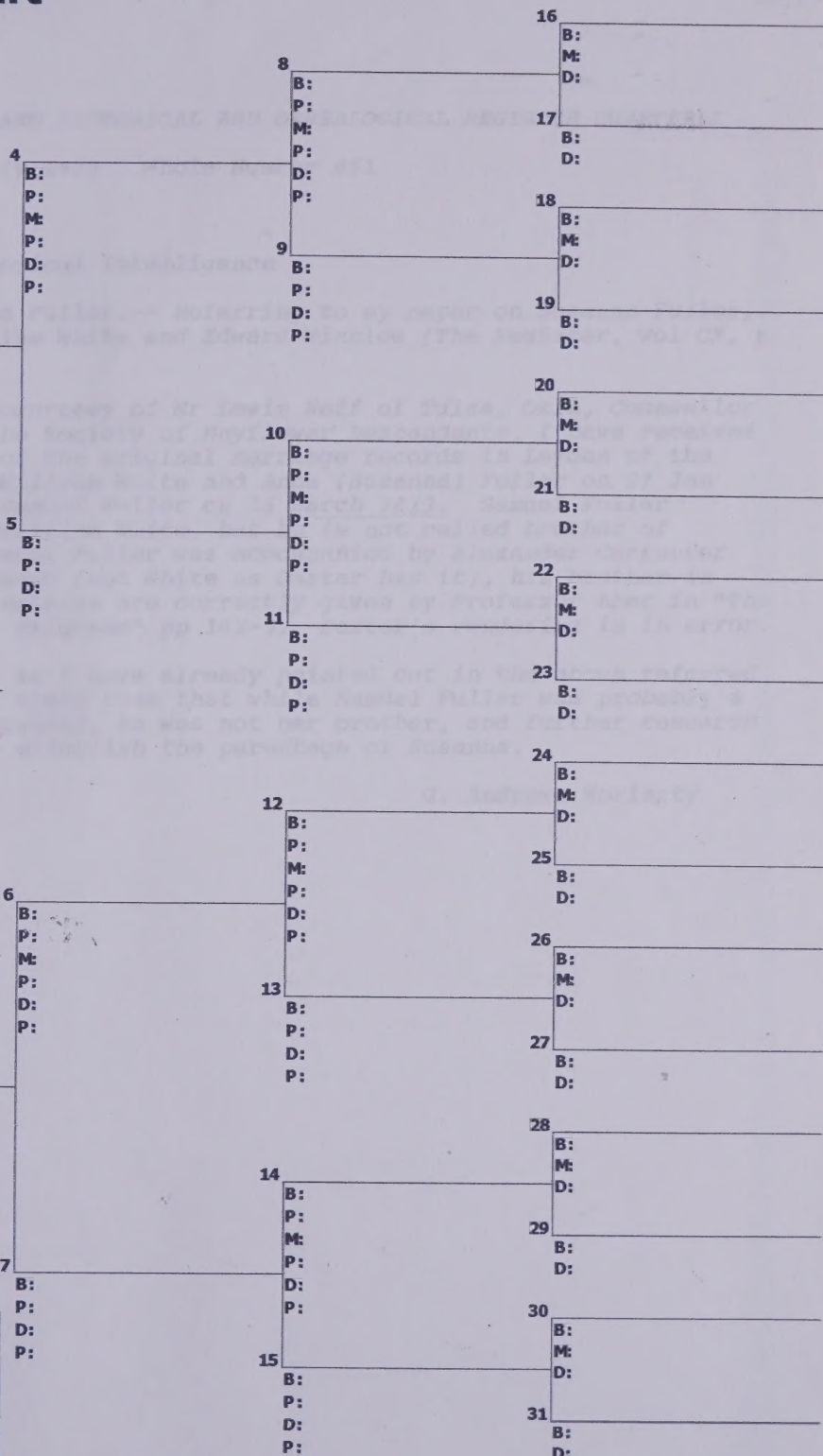
B:
P:
D:
P:

Prepared by
Gladys LaVon (Lowe) Treadway
1104 Kimberly Rd. Unit # 403
Bettendorf, IA 52722-4111

Scott

Telephone
(563) 355-2095

Date prepared
30 May 2018



THE NEW ENGLAND HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL REGISTER QUARTERLY

Vol CXIII July 1959 Whole Number 451

FULLER

Notes - Historical Intelligence

p236 Susanna Fuller.-- Referring to my paper on Susanna Fuller, wife of William White and Edward Winslow (The Register, vol CX, p 182-3)

Through the courtesy of Mr Lewis Neff of Tulsa, Okla, Counsellor General of the Society of Mayflower Descendants, I have received a photostat of the original marriage records in Leyden of the marriages of William White and Anna (Susanna) Fuller on 27 Jan 1612 and of Samuel Fuller on 15 March 1613. Samuel Fuller accompanied William White, but he is not called brother of Susanna. Samuel Fuller was accompanied by Alexander Carpenter and William Hoyt (not White as Dexter has it), his brother in law. These entries are correctly given by Professor Aber in "The Story of the Pilgrims" pp 162-3. Dexter's rendering is in error.

Accordingly, as I have already pointed out in the above referred to paper, it would seem that while Samuel Fuller was probably a kinsman of Susanna, he was not her brother, and further research is needed to establish the parentage of Susanna.

Wells, Maine

G. Andrews Moriarty

FRYE, FRY

JOHN Came on "Bevis" 1638, Newbury (Mass.) 1638, Andover 1644, d there 9 Nov 1693. Wheelwright. Selectman. *Fry genealogy* 1920; tag 41:77 (son Samuel). #513.†

FULLER *Fuller genealogy* 1908 (chiefly Edward); 1910 (chiefly Samuel); 1914 (chiefly Matthew with the Johns and Robert); 1919 (chiefly Thomas of Woburn), v 1-4.

EDWARD Came on "Mayflower" 1620, Plymouth, d there by 10 Apr 1621. Signer of Mayflower Compact. Brother of Samuel. *Fuller family* 1971 (reprint of vol 1 with additions); tag 16:38 (son Samuel). Society of Mayflower Descendants five-generation project in progress.†

JOHN Boston (Mass.) 1630, Lynn 1639, d there 6 Apr 1695. Lieutenant. Representative. Gentleman. Joiner. "John Fuller of Lynn," *Register of the Lynn historical society* 1914 (pamph reprint); ner 50:533 (clue) 100:255 (clue).

JOHN Came over ca 1635, Cambridge Village (Newton, Mass.) ca 1644, d 7 Feb 1697. S.†

JOHN Ipswich (Mass.) 1634, Salisbury 1639, Ipswich 1648, d there 4 June 1666. Town Surveyor. Commissioner, ner 53:335 (desc). #1951, 3566.†

MATTHEW Plymouth (Mass.) 1640, Barnstable 1650, d there Aug 1678. Captain. Freeman. Magistrate. #1763.

ROBERT Came on "Bevis" 1638, Salem (Mass.) 1638, Rehoboth 1668, d there 10 May 1706. Bricklayer. Freeman. *Robert Fuller of Salem and Rehoboth* 1931 (pamph; line); *Robert Fuller of Salem and Rehoboth* 1969 (line). #1773, 2020, 2147, 2478, 2538, 2549, 2733.†

ROBERT Dorchester (Mass.) 1640, Dedham, d 14 Dec 1688.

SAMUEL Came on "Mayflower" 1620, Plymouth (Mass.) 1620, d there 1633. Physician. Deacon. Brother of Edward. Society of Mayflower Descendants five-generation project in progress.†

THOMAS Cambridge (Mass.) 1638, Woburn 1638, Salem 1668, d there June 1698. Smith. Lieutenant. *Joseph Fuller, descendants of Thomas Fuller* 1897: *Historical Collections Danvers Historical Society*, 30:11 (line).†

THOMAS Dedham (Mass.) 1642, d there 28 Sept 1690. Selectman. Chief Justice Fuller, a descendant 1888 (pamph); *Dedham historical register* 4:156 (desc). Apparently not of Cambridge. See Pope.

WILLIAM Severn River (Md.) 1654, Cape Fear River (S.C.) 1678, d there by 10 July 1695. Governor of Maryland. Jester, *Adventurers* 1964 ed.

FURBER

WILLIAM Came on "Angel Gabriel" 1635, Ipswich Mass.), Dover Neck 1639, Newington, d by Nov 1694. Representative. Weirsmen. mnh.

FURBISH v. FORBES

FURMAN v. FORMAN

Journal of Robert H. Lytle

1871-1872

1871-1872. This year was spent in the study of the history of the United States, and the preparation of a book on the subject.

1872-1873. This year was spent in the study of the history of the United States, and the preparation of a book on the subject.

1873-1874. This year was spent in the study of the history of the United States, and the preparation of a book on the subject.

1874-1875. This year was spent in the study of the history of the United States, and the preparation of a book on the subject.

1875-1876. This year was spent in the study of the history of the United States, and the preparation of a book on the subject.

1876-1877. This year was spent in the study of the history of the United States, and the preparation of a book on the subject.

1877-1878. This year was spent in the study of the history of the United States, and the preparation of a book on the subject.

1878-1879. This year was spent in the study of the history of the United States, and the preparation of a book on the subject.

1879-1880. This year was spent in the study of the history of the United States, and the preparation of a book on the subject.

1880-1881. This year was spent in the study of the history of the United States, and the preparation of a book on the subject.

1881-1882. This year was spent in the study of the history of the United States, and the preparation of a book on the subject.

1882-1883. This year was spent in the study of the history of the United States, and the preparation of a book on the subject.

1883-1884. This year was spent in the study of the history of the United States, and the preparation of a book on the subject.

1884-1885. This year was spent in the study of the history of the United States, and the preparation of a book on the subject.

HUDSON-MOHAWK GENEALOGICAL AND FAMILY MEMOIRS

A RECORD OF ACHIEVEMENTS OF THE PEOPLE OF THE HUDSON AND
MOHAWK VALLEYS IN NEW YORK STATE, INCLUDED WITHIN THE PRE-
SENT COUNTIES OF ALBANY, RENSSELAER, WASHINGTON, SARATOGA,
MONTGOMERY, FULTON, SCHENECTADY, COLUMBIA AND GREENE.

PREPARED UNDER THE EDITORIAL SUPERVISION OF
CUYLER REYNOLDS

Curator of The Albany Institute and Historical and Art Society, since 1898; Director of New
York State History Exhibit at Jamestown Exposition, 1907; Author of "Albany
Chronicles," "Classified Quotations," and several other published works.

VOLUME I.

ILLUSTRATED

NEW YORK
LEWIS HISTORICAL PUBLISHING COMPANY

1911

ness and religious circles of Albany. He was president of the Walter McEwan Company, trustee and secretary of the Home Savings Bank, trustee and vice-president of B. Payn's Sons Tobacco Company, treasurer of the St. Andrews Society, and a member of several Masonic bodies. For many years he was an elder of the Third Presbyterian Church. Mr. and Mrs. Walter McEwan, on their marriage, started housekeeping in Albany, but in 1885 removed to Loudonville, a suburb, where they continued to reside until his death. Children, born in Albany, New York: 1. Walter Stuart, born December 20, 1873; married, September 24, 1902, Mary C. Blakeslee, of Menands, New York. 2. Agnes Lauder, January 28, 1876; married, September 20, 1899, Charles Sumner Stedman, of Albany, New York (see Stedman IX). 3. Jessie Ellis, June 16, 1878; married, October 7, 1903, Henry Hunt Romer, of Brooklyn, New York. 4. George William, June 11, 1882; married, April 21, 1908, Gertrude Marsh Peck, of Albany. 5. Charles Bailey, June 1, 1884.

FULLER The family name of Fuller signifies one who thickens, bleaches, cleanses or whitens cloth at a mill, a clothier. The Fuller arms: Shield: Argent, three bars gules, on a canton of the second a castle or. Crest: A dexter arm embowed, vested argent, cuffed sable, holding in the hand proper a sword of the first hilt of pommel or. Motto: Semper paratus. This is the form adopted commonly by the families in this country, being the one employed in the Isle of Wight. The bar is one of the honorable ordinaries representing a belt of honor given for eminent services. The canton is a subordinate ordinary, representing the banner given to knights-banneret.

Edward and Samuel Fuller, brothers, came to America in the "Mayflower" in 1620, and landed at Plymouth, Massachusetts. They were sons of Robert Fuller, a butcher of Norfolk county, England. Both signed the celebrated "Compact," which was drawn up in the cabin of the "Mayflower" just previous to the landing at Cape Cod on November 21.

(I) Edward Fuller, progenitor of this family in America, was baptized September 4, 1575, in the parish of Redenhall, county of Norfolk, England. It is not known that he was one of that band which, because of the persecutions in the time of Queen Elizabeth for religious belief, sailed to Holland in 1608, where they settled in Amsterdam and a year later were located in Leyden, until they embarked on the "Speedwell," which left Delit-

haven, Holland, about August 1, 1620; but research makes it appear that it was more likely that he joined the others on the arrival of the "Speedwell" at Southampton, where they joined the "Mayflower," and August 15, 1620, the two vessels started to cross the Atlantic; but the "Speedwell," proving unseaworthy, was forced to turn back. His brother, Samuel, had gone to Holland, however, and both crossed the ocean together. Their father is recorded as a contributor to the famous chime of eight bells to the Redenhall church in Norfolk county, he helping towards the purchase of the sixth bell in 1588. Although it is sometimes stated that Edward had a wife named Ann, the most accurate information is that her name is unknown. Governor Bradford does not mention her by name; but states "Edward Fuller and his wife died soon after they came on shore." His death occurred at Plymouth, Massachusetts, between January 11 and April 10, 1621. His wife died early in 1621, some time after January 11. They left only one child, Samuel, who had come over with them on the "Mayflower."

(II) Samuel, son of Edward and Ann Fuller, was born about 1612, at some place in England not yet determined, no record of his birth or baptism having been discovered, and died at Barnstable, Massachusetts, October 31 or November 10, 1683. He married at Mr. Cudworth's house in Scituate, by Captain Miles Standish, magistrate, "on ye fourthe daye of ye weeke," April 8-18, 1635, Jane, daughter of Rev. John Lathrop, of Scituate, and who was baptized September 29, 1614, at Edgerly, county of Kent, England; died subsequent to 1658 and before 1683. He grew up under the direct care of his uncle, Dr. Samuel Fuller, at Plymouth. He received three acres of land at the time of the general division in 1623, thought to signify one for himself and the shares of his deceased father and mother. On this theory he would have been sixteen years old at that time, and his birth would have occurred in 1608 instead of 1612; but there may have been some particular understanding. The land assigned to him was on the south side of the town brook ("to the Woodward") and included what was known in 1900 as Watson's Hill, where he had for neighbors, John Howland, Stephen Hopkins, Edward Winslow and the Indian Hobomok. When the inhabitants were divided into twelve groups at the town meeting held on June 1, 1627, for the purpose of dividing the cattle then owned in the colony, the eighth lot fell to Dr. Samuel Fuller and his company, and joined to him was Samuel Fuller, Jr., son of Edward, the immigrant.

"To this lot fell a red heifer, came of the cow which belongeth to the poor of the Colony."

When Dr. Samuel Fuller made his will in 1633, he made provision for his nephew, Samuel, and therein is the only mention to be found of Samuel's wife, after her marriage. Therein he wrote: "It. my will is that my Cozen (nephew) Samuell goe freely away with his stock of Cattle and Swine without any further reckoning wch swine are the halfe of six sowes, six hogges, one boare & four shotes. Also one Cow & one heyfier.

It. my will is that in case my sonne Samyell and other my children die before such time as they are fitt to enter upon my land for inheritance that then my kinsman, Sam. ffuller, now in the howse with me, enjoy wtsoever lands I am now possessed of, except my dwelling howse at town or whatsoever shall be due to me or them. . . . It. I give to him my Rufflet Cloake & my stuffe sute I now weare." He dated the will July 30, 1633, and died within three months. As the doctor's children survived, Samuel received none of the lands and set out with his cattle to seek a home. He became a "Freeman" of the Colony in 1634, and settled in Scituate, Massachusetts, where he joined the church, November 7, 1636. There he had twenty acres, and built the fifteenth house in that place in 1636. All the houses in the town were built alike, and Rev. John Lathrop, accustomed to life at Christ's College, Cambridge, styled them "meane." The walls were made of poles filled between with stones and clay, the roof thatched, the chimney of rough stone, the windows of oiled paper, and the floors of hand-sawed planks. He described them as mere "booths," because they were open and the fire had to be piled high constantly to keep the occupant warm in winter. His will was made October 29, 1683, was filed with wills of the Plymouth Colony, and is both curious and interesting in its peculiar details.

Children: 1. Hannah, birth date unknown; married, January 1, 1658-59, Nicholas Bonham, of Barnstable. 2. Samuel, baptized at Scituate, Massachusetts, February 11, 1637; married Anna, daughter of Matthew Fuller. 3. Elizabeth, married Joseph Taylor. 4. Sarah, baptized August 1, 1641, died about 1651-54. 5. Mary, baptized June 16, 1644, died near Norwich, Connecticut, 1720; married, November, 18, 1674, Joseph Williams, of Haverhill, Massachusetts. 6. Thomas, born May 18, 1651, died young. 7. Sarah, born December 10, 1654; married ——— Crowe, of Yarmouth. 8. John, born about

1656, see forward. 9. Infant, baptized February 8, 1658, died in fifteen days.

(III) John, son of Samuel and Jane (Lathrop) Fuller, was born in Barnstable, Massachusetts, about 1656, died in East Haddam, Connecticut, between February 28 and May 20, 1726. He was called "Little John" to distinguish him from his cousin, Dr. John Fuller. He lived on his father's estate at Sorton Neck until 1694, when he removed to East Haddam, Connecticut. He seems to have prospered here, as about 1721 he conveyed ample lands and farming implements to each of his sons. His will was made February 28, 1725-26, probated May 10, 1726, and in it he speaks of his place of residence as "township of Haddam, County of Hartford, upon the east side of the Great River." He married, about 1678, Mehitabel, daughter of Moses Rowley, and was born in Barnstable, January 11, 1660-61, died in East Haddam, Connecticut, about 1732. Children: 1. Thomas, born in Barnstable about 1679, see forward. 2. Samuel, born in Barnstable, about 1682. 3. Shubael, born in Barnstable, about 1684. 4. Thankful, born in Barnstable, about 1688, baptized there May 19, 1689; married, at Colchester, Connecticut, July 9, 1707, Jabez Crippen, of Falmouth, Massachusetts. 5. Deborah, born about 1689; married, September 11, 1716, John Rowley. 6. Edward, born in Barnstable, about 1691; married, about 1713, ——— Bates; died in Colchester, January 7, 1731. 7. Elizabeth, born in Barnstable, about 1693; married, March 4, 1713, Samuel Rowley, of East Haddam. 8. John, born in East Haddam, Connecticut, November 10, 1697; died there in 1757-58; married, May 1, 1721, Mrs. Mary Rowley, daughter of William Cornwall. 9. Joseph, born in East Haddam, Connecticut, March 1, 1699-1700, died in Kent, Connecticut, July 19, 1775; married, December 22, 1722, Lydia Day. 10. Benjamin, born in East Haddam, October 20, 1701, died in Sharon, Connecticut, December 20, 1740; married, about 1700, Content Fuller. 11. Anne, born about 1703-04; married, March 9, 1727, Jonathan Rowley. 12. Mehitabel, born in East Haddam, April 6, 1706; married Benjamin Kneeland.

(IV) Thomas, son of John and Mehitabel (Rowley) Fuller, was born in Barnstable, Massachusetts, about 1679, died in East Haddam, Connecticut, April 9, 1772. He married Elizabeth ———, born about 1689, died November 5, 1784. Children: 1. Ebenezer, born October 27, 1715, see forward. 2. Thomas, born East Haddam, April 5, 1717; married (first) Martha Rowley; married (second) Mary Hosmer; died in East Haddam, Novem-

ber 12, 1802. 3. Nathan, born in East Haddam, Connecticut, April 20, 1719; married Abigail ———. 4. Hannah, born March 21, 1720; died June 16, 1777; married, 1743, Captain William Church. 5. Jabez, born in East Haddam, February 19, 1722, died there, 1757-58; married, October 10, 1754, Lois Hubbard, of Middle Haddam, Connecticut. 6. Jonathan, born January 12, 1725, died in 1758; unmarried. 7. Elizabeth, born March, 1727; married, November 12, 1747, Samuel Church.

(V) Ebenezer, son of Thomas and Elizabeth Fuller, was born in East Haddam, Connecticut, October 27, 1715, died in Hebron, Connecticut, September 30, 1749. His will bears date September 13, 1749. He married, September 30, 1738, Mary, daughter of Moses and Martha (Porter) Rowley, of Colchester, Connecticut, born there December 5, 1708, died in Hebron, February 5, 1798. Children: 1. Ebenezer, born in Hebron, May 8, 1739; married, March 20, 1764, Abigail Hendee. 2. Dimmis, born October 1, 1742; married Solomon Huntington, of Hebron. 3. Mary, born August 25, 1743; married John Filer. 4. Ozias, born in Hebron, September 25, 1745, and might have been the one of that name who enlisted as a drummer, March 20, 1762, in the First Connecticut Regiment, Twelfth Company, Captain King. 5. Roger, born in Hebron, July 21, 1747, see forward. 6. Elizabeth, born April 5, 1750.

(VI) Roger, son of Ebenezer and Mary (Rowley) Fuller was born in Hebron, Connecticut, July 21, 1747, died there, September 21, 1819. He married (first), December 21, 1766, Martha Phelps, who died February 13, 1785, by whom nine children; married (second), November 17, 1785, Violette Taylor, of Coventry, Connecticut, who died January 14, 1806, by whom three children; married (third), January 11, 1807, Lois Taylor, who died August 23, 1809; married (fourth), June 21, 1810, Susannah Keeney, who died in 1852. Children, all born in Hebron, Connecticut: 1. Martha, born June 7, 1768; married, April 20, 1784, Talcott Horsford. 2. Ozias, born January 12, 1770; married, in 1794, Desire Barber. 3. Mary, born November 1, 1771. 4. Roger, born September 7, 1773, died in Barnstable, Massachusetts, June 23, 1834; married, at Clarendon, Vermont, February 4, 1796, Rachel Freeman Hodges. 5. Frederick Augustus, born March 1, 1775. 6. Erastus, born January 11, 1777; married, January 27, 1801, Sybil Barber, of Hebron. 7. Anna, born June 25, 1779; married, August, 1798, George O. Cook, of Windsor, Vermont. 8. John, born

June 30, 1781; see forward. 9. Luna, born January 23, 1785. 10. Humphrey T., born July 29, 1786. 11. Amelia, born January 7, 1788. 12. Cynthia, born March 26, 1790.

(VII) John (2), son of Roger and Martha (Phelps) Fuller, was born in Hebron, Connecticut, June 30, 1781. It is believed that he removed to near Rome, New York, where he probably died. He married, New Baltimore, New York, in 1813, Isabel Anderson, and resided there. Children: 1. John, died at age of twenty-four. 2. William, born in New Baltimore, New York, September 7, 1814; see forward.

(VIII) William, son of John (2) and Isabel (Anderson) Fuller, was born in New Baltimore, Greene county, New York, September 7, 1814, died on a train at Port Henry, New York, August 16, 1894, and was buried in New Baltimore, where he had resided with his large family all his life, the place known as the Fuller homestead, and its occupants the leading people of the locality. He married at New Baltimore, New York, October 20, 1840, Lydia Allen Swezey, born at Coxsackie, New York, May 9, 1815, died at New Baltimore, New York, May 5, 1887, daughter of Stephen and Gertrude (Wilson) Swezey. Gertrude Wilson was the daughter of Josiah Wilson, a captain in the revolution, and Jane Dickinson (Plum) Wilson. Jane Dickinson was the daughter of Jonathan and Joanna (Melyn) Dickinson. Jonathan Dickinson, who was the founder and the first president of Princeton College, was the son of Hezekiah Dickinson, who was the son of Nathaniel Dickinson (one of the first settlers of Wethersfield, Connecticut) and Abigail Blakeman, daughter of Samuel Blakeman and granddaughter of Adam Blakeman, the first minister of Stratford, Connecticut, and a graduate of Oxford University. Joanna Melyn was the daughter of Jacob Melyn, who owned Staten Island and a part of Manhattan Island and was a Patroon. Josiah Wilson was one of twenty-one children, and the descendants of this family were numerous and most distinguished, including the Sargeants, Runyons, Belmonts, Greenes, Alexanders, Perrys and Bigelows. One of Josiah Wilson's sisters was the mother of Commodore Oliver Hazard Perry, famous in the battle of Lake Erie, and therefore Commodore Perry was Howard N. Fuller's third cousin. Another sister was the mother of the Hon. John Bigelow. William and Lydia Allen (Swezey) Fuller had the following children, all born at New Baltimore, New York: 1. Emma Louise, born November 7, 1841; unmarried. 2. De Witt Allison, born February 17, 1844; married, Jan-

uary 13, 1868, Mary Christine Hotaling; died in Albany, New York, September 19, 1894. 3. Franklin Carey, born December 28, 1845, died in New Baltimore, New York, August 15, 1846. 4. William Dickinson, born June 24, 1847; married, February 11, 1885, Jennie Springsted, living in New Baltimore in 1910. 5. Gertrude Amelia, born August 14, 1849, died in New Baltimore, New York, January 21, 1852. 6. Perry James, born September 4, 1851; married, September 10, 1879, Lydia A. Stewart, of New Brunswick, New Jersey, residing at 105 Lincoln Place, Brooklyn, New York, in 1910. 7. Howard Newton, born October 29, 1853, see forward. 8. Jennie Antoinette, born March 6, 1856; married, January 7, 1885, Wessel Ten Broeck Van Orden, of New Baltimore, New York.

(IX) Howard Newton, son of William and Lydia Allen (Swezey) Fuller, was born in New Baltimore, Greene county, New York, October 29, 1853. He received his education first at Miss Griffith's private school in New Baltimore, then attended the Coeymans Academy, after which he went to Rutgers College Grammar School, and then entered Rutgers College, graduating therefrom in 1874, and receiving the degree of A.M. in 1877. While at Rutgers he won the Philoclean Literary prize, as also the Senior prize for English composition. In his junior year he wrote "On the Banks of the Old Raritan," which is considered the best of all American college songs, of which the *New York Sun*, of May 15, 1907, said: "For genuine go, martial swing, a real soul-stirrer, one that gingerizes the student anatomy from head to heel, there is no other college song equal to the Rutgers 'On the Banks of the Old Raritan.'" The following, by him, is called the finest homiletic poem in the English language, and was written by him while at college in response to the request of a college friend for a motto to go on a school-room wall:

"So let me live that when I die
My life shall show no blot of shame,
And o'er the grave wherein I lie.
Beneath my plainly graven name,
Upon a low and modest stone,
Which every eye can quickly scan,
May this be carved and thus alone:
'He never wronged his brother man.'"

Mr. Fuller has written a great many poems which have given real enjoyment to the casual reader, and all have met with commendation at the hands of critics, yet he is modest about the matter, which he considers but a form of recreation and pleasure, and has never saved them. On "Educational Day," July 10, 1886, of the week's celebration of Albany's Bi-Cen-

tennial, one thousand of the city's school children sang an ode, written for the occasion by him, with telling effect and arousing much enthusiasm.

He began his business career as a clerk in Hinman & Fuller's grocery store at New Baltimore in the fall of 1874; established and published *The New Baltimore Sun*; went to Albany in July, 1875, as clerk for William Fuller & Sons; edited *The Rensselaer County Gazette* for several years, and took a two-year course in both medicine and law while continuing his relations with Wm. Fuller & Sons. He entered actively into the flour business under his own name in 1890. On the death of his brother, De Witt Allison Fuller, in 1894, he continued the latter's business (building material) in conjunction with his own. He is a member of the First Reformed Protestant Dutch Church, of which he was a deacon for several years and a trustee in 1910 as well as for some time previous. He is a member of the Albany Chamber of Commerce, the Unconditional Republican Club, Philip Livingston Chapter, Sons of the Revolution, Zeta. Psi fraternity, St. George's Benevolent Society, Fort Orange Club, is a thirty-second degree Mason, was elected a life trustee of Rutgers College in 1905; president of the Unconditional Club for three terms, 1888-1891; president of the Albany County McKinley League in 1896, and president of the Eleventh Ward Republican Association, 1885-89. He is also a director of the First National Bank, trustee of the Home Savings Bank and trustee of the Albany Homeopathic Hospital.

Mr. Fuller has been an active Republican for years, and his political record is as follows: He was Republican candidate for mayor of Albany at a time when the city had gone Democratic for a score of years, and at the election held April 8, 1890, received 6,316 votes as against his opponent, Hon. James H. Manning's 13,552 votes as the head of the Democratic city ticket. He was elected alderman of the eleventh ward, April 13, 1886, receiving 713 votes against 616 votes cast for his opponent, Richard Ryan; served two years, and declined renomination. He was appointed commissioner of public instruction by Mayor Manning in 1893; served eight months, and resigned on account of the death of both his father and brother, whose business demanded his attention for their families. He was elected city comptroller, November 5, 1901, receiving 12,730 votes against 10,885 votes cast for Charles H. Bissikummer, the Democratic candidate; was re-elected November 3, 1903, receiving 13,970 votes against 9,777 votes cast for Edmund A. Walsh, his

opponent; re-elected November 7, 1905, receiving 15,753 votes, against 7,483 cast for Philip J. Henzel, the Democratic candidate; re-elected November 5, 1907, receiving 13,736 votes as against 10,198 votes cast for Edward T. Reed, candidate of the Democratic and Civic League parties; re-elected November 2, 1909, receiving 15,205 votes as against 8,437 votes cast for Edwin F. Hunting, Democratic and Civic League candidate. The figures speak for themselves, showing a pronounced endorsement of his conduct of the office of city comptroller by the people of Albany, placing their confidence in him by electing him five times in succession to that office, and by an increase in vote which was the last time nearly double that of all the parties combined against him.

Mr. Fuller married, in Albany, December 5, 1898, Mary Christine Hotaling, widow of his brother, De Witt Allison Fuller, of New Baltimore, New York. Mary Christine Hotaling was born in New Baltimore, Greene county, New York, May 15, 1849, daughter of Amos and Ann Eliza Hotaling, who were married at Coxsackie, New York, October 30, 1844. Amos Hotaling was born in New Baltimore, March 17, 1815, died there January 24, 1909, and was the son of Garrett and Hester (Bronk) Hotaling, the latter a daughter of Ephraim and Annetje Knott Bronk, and his ancestors were Peter Bronk and Rachel Van Hoesen. Pieter Bronk and Annetje Bogardus, Peter Bogardus and Wyntje Westbrouck, Rev. Everardus Bogardus and Anneke Jans. Ann Eliza Hotaling was born in Coxsackie, New York, September 30, 1822, died in New Baltimore, March 20, 1903, daughter of Henry and Maria (Vandenbergh) Hotaling. Mr. and Mrs. Howard N. Fuller resided, in 1910, at No. 144 State street, Albany, New York. Children of Mrs. Fuller by first marriage: Emma Louise, born November 7, 1868, see forward; Anna Eliza, November 7, 1868, see forward; Zada Constance, October 27, 1872, see forward; William Allison, August 2, 1878, see forward.

(X) Emma Louise Fuller was born in New Baltimore, New York, November 7, 1868; married, Albany, New York, June 7, 1893, Charles Henry Douglas, manufacturer of woolen goods at Cohoes and residing in Albany. He was born in Albany, March 13, 1868. His father was Charles Henry Douglas, died in Albany, August 29, 1885, being the son of John and Jane Miller (Mueller) Douglas. His mother was Sarah Martha Root, who was born in Albany, May 6, 1851, died at Hague, Lake George, New York, August 19, 1907, daughter of Josiah G. and Martha

Washington (Mead) Root. Charles H. Douglas and Sarah M. Root were married at Albany. Mr. and Mrs. Charles H. Douglas resided, in 1910, at No. 168 Mohawk street, Cohoes, New York.

(X) Anna Eliza Fuller was born in New Baltimore, New York, November 7, 1868; married, Albany, New York, April 6, 1892, John Ferguson Moore, born in Albany, August 22, 1867, son of Dr. Levi and Ida Louise (Ferguson) Moore. Children: Gertrude Fuller Moore, born in Albany, March 27, 1893; John Ferguson Moore, born in Albany, September 10, 1896. They resided, in 1910, at No. 342 Hudson avenue, Albany, New York.

(X) Zada Constance Fuller was born in New Baltimore, New York, October 27, 1872. She married, Albany, October 26, 1898, Frederick Foster Ward, of Wilmington, Delaware, born in Jeffersonville, Indiana, November 2, 1871, son of Isaac Foster and Frances Brownell (Avery) Ward. Mr. and Mrs. Frederick F. Ward resided, in 1910, at No. 56 Woodland avenue, New Rochelle, New York.

(X) William Allison Fuller was born in Albany, New York, August 2, 1878. He received his education at the Albany Academy and Cornell University. He is a member of the Fort Orange Club, of Albany; the St. Elmo Club, of New York City, and of the Delta Phi fraternity. In 1910 he was a mechanical engineer, residing at No. 144 State street, Albany, New York.

In the "Mayflower" came Edward Fuller and Dr. Samuel Fuller, December 20, 1620. Edward died in the "first sickness," 1621, leaving a son Samuel, who settled on Cape Cod. Dr. Samuel Fuller was the first physician in the colony. He married (according to Leyden records) (first) Elsie Glascock; (second) Agnes Carpenter, but his children are by his third wife, Bridget Lee, of Plymouth. She came to Massachusetts on the ship "Ann" in 1623. She was married to Dr. Samuel Fuller in Leyden, in 1617. Their first child was born in Leyden, but died soon after their arrival at Plymouth. Dr. Samuel died in 1633, leaving an only son Samuel, and an only daughter Mercy, who married Ralph James.

(II) Samuel (2), only son of Dr. Samuel (1) and Bridget (Lee) Fuller, was born in 1624, died August 17, 1695. He was a minister of the gospel. His tombstone reads: "Here Lyes ye body of ye Rev. Mr. Samuel Fuller who departed this life Aug. ye 17, 1695, in ye 71st year of his age. He was ye 1st minister of ye 1st church of Christ in

Middleboro." He was a deacon of the Plymouth church, and ordained a minister, December 25, 1694, but he had preached to the Middleboro congregation sixteen years before his ordination. He was a sincere, godly man, and was sincerely lamented by his people. In the settlement of his estate, found in probate records of Middleboro, book I, page 246, dated October 1, 1695, Elizabeth is mentioned as the widow of Rev. Samuel Fuller; Samuel, as the oldest son; John, as the second son; Isaac, as the youngest, and under age. The daughters mentioned are Mercy, wife of Daniel Cole; Experience, wife of James Wood; Elizabeth, wife of Samuel Eaton, and an unmarried daughter Hannah. Elizabeth Fuller, his widow, died at Plympton, Massachusetts, November 11, 1713.

(III) Samuel (3), son of Rev. Samuel (2) and Elizabeth Fuller, was one of the first settlers of Plympton, Massachusetts. He married Mercy, daughter of Benjamin Eaton (1). He died in Plympton, September 6, 1728, in his seventieth year. Children: Nathaniel, born November 14, 1687; Samuel, August 30, 1689; William, died in infancy; Seth, August 30, 1692; Benjamin, March 7, 1694; Ebenezer, March 24, 1695; Elizabeth, March 30, 1697; John, December 19, 1698; Jabez, June, 1701; Mercy, October 3, 1702; James, February 27, 1704.

(IV) It is from one of the sons of Samuel (3) Fuller, of Plympton, that Samuel Fuller, of Schenectady, descends. The records do not follow out the children with sufficient clearness, but the best indications are that he was a son of James, the youngest son, born February 27, 1704.

(V) Samuel (4), grandson of Samuel (3) Fuller, of Plympton, and perhaps son of James Fuller, located in Schenectady as early as December 7, 1763, when he was married to Anna, daughter of William Hall, who was taken prisoner by the French and Indians and carried to France, where he died. Anna Hall was a lineal descendant of the first Ryer Schermerhorn, an original proprietor of Schenectady. Samuel Fuller first came to Schenectady, March 28, 1758, and was then wholly employed in the King's service at Schenectady, Albany, Stillwater, Fort Edward, Lake George and Niskayuna. He was engaged in the construction of boats, wagons, log houses and shelters for the army commanded by General Abercrombie. On July 31, 1758, he returned to Boston, going from there to Halifax, where he arrived February 7, 1759, and continued in the royal service at the navy yard until after the taking of Quebec by General Wolfe in September, 1759, returning

again to Schenectady, where he arrived July, 1761. He was an accomplished architect, and did more than any one man to improve the style of building, and to his skill is to be attributed the stately buildings seen throughout the length and breadth of the Mohawk. He built "The Hermitage" in Niskayuna for the retired merchant, John Duncan; the Guy Park mansion, afterward the home of Sir Guy Johnson; the Claas mansion, the abode later of Colonel Daniel Claas, son-in-law of Sir William Johnson. He built the old court house at Johnstown; the dwelling of General Nicholas Herkimer; the Episcopal church in Schenectady (1762), the oldest Episcopal church structure in the state; the John Glen mansion; the Ten Eyck mansion, later the home of Governor Joseph C. Yates; the Daniel Campbell mansion, the latter mentioned all in Schenectady, which city owes much to his early architectural skill. During the years from 1761, when he took up his permanent residence in Schenectady, until his death just prior to the revolution, he was constantly employed in construction and architectural work. Children: Jeremiah, see forward; Annatjie, born April 8, 1771.

(VI) Jeremiah, only son of Samuel (4) and Anna (Hall) Fuller, was born in Schenectady, October 26, 1766. He was a man of high character, strict integrity and great business energy. He married, January 23, 1790, Mary, daughter of George Kendall. She died November 9, 1860, in her eighty-sixth year. Her husband died June 18, 1839, in his seventy-third year. They were the parents of fourteen children, ten sons and four daughters, all of whom reached majority, except Samuel, the first born, and one daughter Ann. Four of the sons became lawyers; four physicians, and one only did not have a professional career: 1. Samuel, died in infancy. 2. William Kendall, born November 29, 1792; graduated at Union College, 1810; studied law, becoming law partner of John B. Yates. He removed to Chittenango, Madison county, New York, where he was justice of the peace, town clerk, postmaster, school trustee, commissioner of highways and supervisor. In 1823 he was appointed by Governor Yates adjutant-general of the state of New York. He was, prior to 1823, district attorney of Madison county and judge of the court of common pleas. He was a member of the state assembly, 1829-30, twice elected to represent the twenty-third New York district in congress. After his term expired, he retired to private life and the care of his own estate. He never married. 3. Samuel, born April 16, 1795; graduated from Union College; completed his

medical studies in the city of New York. He was in the practice of his profession at Chittenango, New York, from 1818 to 1866, when he retired and settled in New York with his family. He died in 1867 in his seventy-third year. 4. Ann, died in infancy. 5. George Kendall, born January 29, 1799; graduated Union College; was general agent and superintendent of the extensive farming, mercantile and manufacturing interests of John B. Yates. He died May 9, 1858, unmarried, the only one of the eight brothers who was not a professional man. 6. Amelia Ann, born March 31, 1801, died October 27, 1871. 7. Ann, born April 21, 1803, died June, 1862. 8. Richard, born October 28, 1804; graduated Union College; studied medicine and practiced at Schenectady. He died May 15, 1837. 9. Edward, born February 15, 1807; graduate Union College; studied medicine and settled at Chittenango, New York, where he was the partner of his brother, Dr. Samuel. He died January 22, 1877. 10. Charles, born April 1, 1809. He was a graduate of Union College, studied law and practiced in Schenectady. 11. Henry, born February 2, 1811, died January 6, 1875. He was a graduate of Union College; studied law and practiced in Schenectady. He removed to New York, where he died. 12. James, see forward. 13. Elizabeth, born June 11, 1816. 14. Robert, born February 14, 1822; graduate of Union College; studied medicine and practiced all his life in Schenectady. He was a skillful and most charitable physician.

(VII) James, son of Jeremiah and Mary (Kendall) Fuller, was born in the Fuller home, corner of Church and Front streets, July 24, 1814. He prepared for the practice of law, was admitted to the bar and became an attorney of note. He was a Democrat and a member of the Reformed church. He married Maria H. Yates, born in Schenectady at the Yates home, Washington avenue and Union street, and died in that city, April 16, 1896. She was a member of the distinguished Yates family of Schenectady, who are fully recorded in this work. Children: 1. Isaac, died at age of sixty-five years. 2. Mary Kendall, married Joseph Clements, a prominent contractor of Schenectady. 3. Rachel, married Charles Lynn, of Schenectady. 4. Richard, died at the age of fifty-eight years. He married Maggie Carley and had a daughter, Hellena. 5. James, see forward.

(VIII) James (2), youngest son of James (1) and Maria H. (Yates) Fuller, was born September 17, 1848, at the old home in Schenectady, where he died January 17, 1908. He was educated in the common and high schools

of that city, and read law with his father. He practiced his profession in Schenectady all his life, continuing alone after the death of his father. He was an able and skillful man, was a notary public, and cared for several estates. He stood high in his community, both as an advocate and a citizen. He was a well-known and active Democrat, contributing, in a large degree, to the local successes of his party. He married, January, 1881, Annie M., born in Hamilton, Ontario, Canada, only child of Hugh and Hannah (Lynch) Boyd. Her mother died when she was seven days old, and her father, Hugh Boyd, married (second) Catherine Megill, of the prominent Canadian family, founders and benefactors of Megill University. She was a daughter of Edward, and niece of Charles Megill, both of whom served as mayors of Hamilton. Hugh Boyd was born in Belfast, Ireland, of the aristocratic Boyd family of that city. He was of Scotch ancestry, and came to the United States in 1866, after a residence in Canada of several years. He settled in Schenectady in 1866. He and his second wife both died in 1899. By both marriages he had six children. Children of James and Annie M. (Boyd) Fuller: 1. Hellena E., died at the age of five years. 2. Jane H., born 1896, a student at Holy Name Academy, Albany. Mrs. Fuller survives her husband, and resides in Schenectady.

During the Napoleonic wars a FULLER Frenchman by name Methey left his native land and settled in Pisen, Germany. He had a wife and children, the latter born in Germany.

(II) Nicholas Methey was born in Pisen in 1790. He was a blacksmith by trade. He married Catherine ———, who bore him eight children. In 1849, after having been a widow about four years, she emigrated to the United States with her children, landing in New York City after a voyage of sixty-five days. She finally settled in Albany, with her family, and about 1856 married a second husband, Nicholas Snyder; they moved to Rochester, New York, where they died. Hitherto she had kept her children together, but after her second marriage the family was broken up and has never since been united. The boys took different names, while the identity of the girls was lost in their married names. Each was unknown to the other and in one instance a brother and sister lived near neighbors unknown to each other, they having separated in childhood. Six of the eight children are here named: 1. Henry, left home after his mother's second marriage and assumed the

Copy sent to city
May 1913

Benham, George
Fuller, Samuel

A
GENEALOGICAL DICTIONARY

OF

THE FIRST SETTLERS OF NEW ENGLAND,

SHOWING

THREE GENERATIONS

OF

THOSE WHO CAME BEFORE MAY, 1693,

ON THE

BASIS OF FARMER'S REGISTER.

BY

JAMES SAVAGE,

FORMER PRESIDENT OF THE MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY AND EDITOR OF WINTHROP'S
HISTORY OF NEW ENGLAND.

WITH TWO SUPPLEMENTS

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

Ref

974

D2s

1969

Vol. 2

Baltimore

GENEALOGICAL PUBLISHING COMPANY

1969

GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY

the eject. min. from Co. Cumberland, was employ. at first ch. as assist. to Rev. James Allen for some time, but was compell. to give up this place for prebch. a sermon not compos. by him, rem. to Barbados, thence, perhaps, to Bermuda, and there d. Hutch. I. 427. Emerson, Hist. of first ch. 134. Calamy, II. 150. THOMAS, a passeng. emb. in Eng. 29 May 1679 for Boston in the Elizabeth; but it may be fear, that he never reach. his destin. or else, he soon d. or went home again. THOMAS, Watertown, third s. of William of the same, m. 30 Sept. 1680, Sarah, d. of Thomas Woolson, and had Thomas, b. 29 May 1683; Sarah, 2 Dec. 1685; William, 1 Feb. 1688; Mary, bapt. 7 Dec. 1690; John, b. 14 July 1695; and Isaac, 22 June 1698; and d. 17 Dec. 1704. * WILLIAM, Watertown 1649, third s. of Thomas of Bury St. Edmunds, in Co. Suff'k. bapt. there 3 Sept. 1625, at St. James ch. b. prob. 1630, in the fleet with Winth. by his aunt Eliz. w. of Ephraim Child; m. 7 Feb. 1650, Sarah, d. of Nathaniel Briscoe, wh. d. 16 Feb. 1693; bot. of Rev. John Knowles, after he went home, 5 Mar. 1655, the farm that K. purch. of capt. William Jenkinson; was oft. rep. in the col. days, in the couns. of safety during the insurrect. against Andros, and first speaker of the ho. after the new chart. a man of great energy; had 24 w. 1695, Eliz. wid. of John Nevinsin, and d. 15 Dec. 1695. His wid. surv. a. 25 yrs. His ch. were William, b. 1 Dec. 1650; John, 2 Dec. 1652; Thomas, 23 Dec. 1654; Eliz. 30 Nov. 1656, wh. m. 13 Mar. 1679, Nathaniel Barsham; Nathaniel, 19 Jan. 1659, d. soon; Nathaniel, again, 9 Jan. 1660, unless confusion of style in the fam. gen. has made two out of one; Sarah, 27 July 1661, wh. m. 29 Jan. 1690, Palsgrave Wellington; Jonas, 19 July 1664; and Mary, wh. m. 22 June 1693, Richard Colledge. His descend. Henry of Philadelphia, bestow. many yrs. on the filial duty of publish. the Watertown gen. to fill the admira. vol. of the Hist. of W. WILLIAM, Watertown, s. of the pred. m. 2 June 1680, Hepzibah only d. of Thomas Hastings, had Margaret, b. 1 Oct. 1680; three Williams, of wh. the last was b. 24 May 1695; Deliverance, 2 May 1686; Eliz.; Mary; Samuel; and others, wh. d. young. Four of this name had been gr. at Harv. and four at the other N. E. coll. in 1834. BONDST, DANIEL, Oxford, min. of the Huguenots, or French Protestants, 1691. 3 Mass. Hist. Coll. II. 61.

BONDFIELD, or BONFIST, GEORGE, Marblehead 1676. Dana, & BONDHAM, or BONDUM, GEORGE, Plymouth, m. 20 Dec. 1644, as sec. w. Sarah, d. of George Morton, had, prob. Ruth, wh. m. 28 Nov. 1666, Robert Barron; Patience, wh. m. 28 Dec. 1670, Richard Willis; Sarah, b. 4 Dec. 1649, d. early in 1650; and Sarah, again, 12 Jan. 1651, d. prob. soon; Sarah, again, 10 Dec. 1653; d. 28 Apr. 1704, aged 84. NICHOLAS, Barnstable, perhaps br. of George, m. 1 Jan. 1659, Hannah,

d. of Samuel Fuller the sec. had Hannah, b. 8 Oct. 1659; Mary, 4 Oct. 1661; and Sarah, 16 Feb. 1664. BONNER, JOHN, Boston 1678, by w. Mary had Jane or John, b. 10 Jan. 1686, d. in few mos.; Jonah, 8 July 1687, d. in few days; and Mary, 28 Jan. 1689, d. at 10 yrs. He rem. to Cambridge, there had Jane, 2 May 1691; John, 6 Dec. 1693; and Thomas, 6 Jan. 1696; and b. w. d. 20 Apr. 1697. Soon after he went to Eng. with his ch. See Gen. Reg. V. 174. BONNEY, THOMAS, Charlestown, shoemaker, came in the Hercules, 1635, from Sandwich, in Kent, rem. early was one of the proprs. of Bridgewater 1645, but liv. at Duxbury, where he m. Dorcas, d. of Henry Sampson, had one or more s. prob. and Mary, wh. m. 14 Dec. 1675, John Mitchell. BONYHON, or BONYHON, JOHN, Saco 1636, s. of Richard, Casco 1658, had his ho. burn. by the Ind. 1675 [Willis, I. 44. 138]; and d. bef. 1684, leav. wid. s. John; and hav. an ill epit. Folsom, 116. BONYARD, Saco 1631, was a capt. and magistr. and held court 25 Mar. 1636, and d. a. 1650, paid as large a rate for support of min. as any one in 1635. His d. Sarah m. Richard Foxwell, and ano. m. Richard Codman. BONYHON is the name of a place in Cornwall. BOOBYAR, JOSEPH, Marblehead 1668. BOOMER, MATTHEW, Newport, a freem. there 1655, had fam. of wh. details are unk. BOOST, * JAMES, Wethersfield 1635, by w. Alice had Joseph, b. perb. bef. sett. at Wethersfield; Mary, b. 10 Sept. 1635; Hannah, 10 Feb. 1642; Sarah, 12 Nov. 1643; and James, 1 Feb. 1646; rep. from 1639 till his d. 22 June 1649. His wid. m. James Wakeley, and d. 1683. Of his ch. Mary m. the first Samuel Steele; Hannah m. as is believ. John Pratt; Sarah m. 2 June 1659, Nathaniel Stanley; and James d. under age. The will, of 21 June 1649, gives good portion to each of the five ch. JOSEPH, had w. Esther, but no ch. and d. at West Chester, but had liv. at Fairfield 1655, and his wid. m. Jehu Parr. BOOTHBISH, or BOUFFISH, JOSEPH, Barnstable, prob. s. of Robert, m. June 1674, Eliz. Bessey, had John, b. 6 Dec. 1675; Joseph, Oct. 1677; Mary, 1 Mar. 1680; Hannah, May 1681; Benjamin, 20 July 1683; Nathan, 27 Dec. 1685; Ebenezer, 10 Mar. 1688; Eliz. 27 Aug. 1690; Rebecca, 22 Feb. 1693; Mcleitha, 7 Apr. 1695; Robert, 10 Oct. 1698; and Sarah, 20 Feb. bapt. 6 Apr. 1701. ROBERT, Lynn, freem. 6 May 1655, rem. 1697 to Sandwich, and d. there or at Barnstable, a. 1651; w. had Joseph, b. 3 Apr. 1651, and prob. others earlier, one 27 Mar. 1648, whose name is not giv. Perhaps a s. Robert, and one or more ds. were b. in Eng. or at Lynn. At Barnstable, Bridget, prob. his wid. m. 15 Dec. 1667, Samuel Hineckley, f. of Gov. Thomas, as his 2d w.; Eliz.

He testif. in Mar. 1674, that he kn. the Torreys, William and Samuel at Combe St. Nicholas, Co. Somerset in 1640, when they came. JAMES, Andover, br. of Benjamin, m. 20 Jan. 1680, Lydia, d. of John Osgood, had Lydia, b. 10 Feb. 1681; James; Sarah, 27 Feb. 1685; Joseph, 11 Nov. 1687, d. soon; Timothy, 17 Feb. 1689, d. soon; Timothy, again, 11 Dec. 1690, d. 27 Aug. 1693; Phebe, 1693; Jonathan, H. C. 1723, k. in Lovewell's fight at Pequaket, 1725; Ann, d. young; Dorothy; and Mary; both m. He was freem. 1691. JOHN, Newbury, wheelwright, came from Basing in Hants, May 1638, emb. in the Bevis at Southampton, with w. and three young ch. engaged, I think, by Richard Dummer, wh. was in the sh. rem. 1645 to Andover; and was one of the found. of the ch. freem. 1669; his w. Ann d. 22 Oct. 1680, and he d. 9 Nov. 1693, aged 92 yrs. 7 mos. says the rec. His ch. says Coffin, were John; Samuel; James, b. 5 Jan. 1633; Benjamin; Eliz. and Susan; but, in the want of discrim. to instr. us wh. had come with parents, we assume that John and the last two were b. in Eng. We kn. that Susan on 5 Mar. 1662, d. unm. and that Eliz. m. 4 Oct. 1660, Robert Stiles of Boxford. JOHN, Andover, s. of the preced. m. 4 Oct. 1660, Eunice Potter, prob. had no ch. was deac. d. 17 Sept. 1696. His wid. d. 24 Nov. 1708. ANO. JOHN of A. s. of Samuel, m. 1 Nov. 1694, Tabitha Farnum. SAMUEL, Andover, s. of John the first, m. 20 Nov. 1671, Mary, d. of John Aslett, had John, b. 16 Sept. 1672; Samuel, 1675, d. young; Mary, 22 Feb. 1678; Phebe, 28 May 1680; Hannah, 12 Apr. 1683; Ebenezer, 16 Feb. 1686; Nathan, 15 June 1688; Deborah, 26 Feb. 1692; Samuel, again, 26 Apr. 1694; and Benjamin, 2 Oct. 1698. He d. 9 May 1725; and his wid. d. 1747. Peter, ano. descend. of the first John, II. C. 1744, went, at the Rev. to Eng. d. at Cumberwell, 1820, aged 98. Joseph, ano. descend. b. at A. 1711, went to Maine, was a Gen. in the war of the Rev. gave his name to Fryeburg. Six of these descend. had been gr. at Harv. in 1822. WILLIAM, Weymouth, d. 26 Oct. 1642, leav. w. and ds. Eliz. b. 20 Dec. 1639; and Mary, 9 Jan. 1642. His nuncup. will is in Gen. Reg. II. 385. WILLIAM, Dover, by w. Hannah had William, b. 7 Feb. 1695; John, 26 Aug. 1698; Benjamin, 11 Nov. 1701; Joseph, 3 Feb. 1705; and ano. ch. 9 May 1710.

FRYER, or FRIER, JAMES, Cambridge. His w. Catharine d. 28 July 1640. † *NATHANIEL, Boston, mariner, perhaps s. of the preced. by w. Christian had James, b. 7 Oct. 1653; Sarah, 20 July 1656; and Eliz. 1 Nov. 1657, is in a deed to him, call. Emanuel, alias Nathaniel, after Mar. 1659, when he was adm. of the sec. ch. (of wh. his w. had been some yrs. a mem.) rem. to Portsmouth, m. at Newbury, says Coffin, Oct. 1679, Dorothy, perhaps d. of John Woodbridge, as sec. w. was rep. in

1666, capt. and council. in 1688, d. 13 Aug. 1705. Hubbard, in Ind. Wars, gives acco. of his eldest s. JAMES. THOMAS, Salem, had gr. of ld. 1639, rem. prob. to Gloucester, there was selectman 1642; and Eliz. perhaps his w. or d. d. there 9 Sept. 1685.

FUGLE, THOMAS, New Haven 1639, is nam. by Rev. Thomas Shepard in his autobiog. as one of the serv. of Sir Richard Darley of Buttercombe, had bapt. Mercy, on 2 Aug. 1640; John, 13 June 1641; and Pledge, 1 Feb. 1646; was Sec. of the col. in 1641, so cont. till 1645, when for false rec. he was dism. soon excom. and went home. See Young's Chron. of Mass. 525. One John F. prob. s. of Thomas, was at New Haven a. 1669, as by testim. of Capt. Nathan Andrews, and Mr. John Todd, 30 June 1710, that they knew him above 40 yrs. bef. but he did not, as they knew of, lay any claim to the ld. that was his f's.

FULHAM, FRANCIS, Watertown, m. Sarah, d. of John Livermore, had Jacob, b. 19 Nov. 1693; Sarah, 2 Mar. 1695; Hannah, 10 June 1697; and Mary, 4 Apr. 1702. His w. d. 10 Mar. 1724, and he m. 1 Oct. foll. Mary, wid. of Samuel Jones, d. of Thomas Woolson.

FULLER, BENJAMIN, Rehoboth, s. of Robert of Salem. BENJAMIN, Salem, s. of Thomas, m. 15 Dec. 1685, . . . Bacon, had Samuel, Benjamin, Sarah, Ruth, Abigail, and Hannah. He liv. in the vill. wh. became Danvers, was freem. 1690. DANIEL, New Haven 1640. EDWARD, Plymouth, br. of the famous Samuel, came with him in the Mayflower 1620, bring. w. Ann and s. Samuel, and leav. Matthew, on the other side, wh. was elder, d. early next yr. as did his w. but his s. Samuel outliv. the hardships. EDWARD, Boston 1630, whose s. John, says Lewis, sett. at Lynn. But I believe we kn. no more, than that the name has much prevail. there. Edward was employ. in 1643, to bring with others, the cattle of the Gortonists, taken near Providence, under the absurd pretence of being spoil of war. No doubt he was of the true, or popular faith, or he would not thus have been trusted; and this may, perhaps, render it less prob. that he was the same Edward subject, in 1639 to cens. by the Gen. Ct. for distemper. with wine. EDWARD, Lynn, freem. 1691, was, perhaps, s. of Robert of the same. GILES, Hampton, 1640, d. 2 Apr. 1673. JACOB, Salem vill. now Danvers, freem. 1690. JAMES, Ipswich, by w. Mary, had James, b. 2 Dec. 1673; Mary, 30 May 1675; John, 20 Feb. 1677; Eliz. 25 Feb. 1679; Daniel, 24 Feb. 1681; Nathaniel, 18 Feb. 1683; and Dorothy, 18 Dec. 1684. His wid. prob. liv. to 16 Oct. 1732, aged 85. JEREMIAH, Newton, s. of the first John of the same, was lieut. had bur. four ws. Mary, wh. d. 17 Aug. 1689; Eliz. wh. d. 1700, in which yr. he took Thankful, wh. d. 1729; and Rachel, d. 1742; by first and last had no ch. but by Eliz. had Eliz. b. 14 Apr. 1694, d. soon; and Jeremiah, 8 July 1697, d.

young; and by 3d w. had Thomas, 12 Sept. 1701; Joshua, 12 Apr. 1703; Thankful, 24 Dec. 1704; Jeremiah, again, 1 Nov. 1707, d. young; Eliz. again, 24 Aug. 1709, d. at 2 yrs. and Josiah, 2 Dec. 1710; and d. 23 Dec. 1743. JOHN, Ipswich 1634, perhaps one of the first sett. at Salisbury 1639 or 40. * JOHN, Lynn 1644, may be the same as preceded. was rep. 1655 and 64, had s. John, William, and James, and d. 29 June 1666. JOHN, Cambridge, in that part now Newton, may seem the youth wh. came with John Winthrop, jr. in his sec. voyage in the Abigail 1635, call. 15 yrs. old, but that Jackson, wh. perhaps quotes the grst. says he d. 7 Feb. 1699, in 87th yr. and he was freem. 1690, tho. his first four s. were together made freem. ten yrs. earlier. His wid. Eliz. d. 13 Apr. 1700. He had John, b. 1645; Eliz. Jonathan, 1648; Joseph, 10 Feb. 1652; Joshua, 2 Apr. 1654; Jeremiah, 4 Feb. 1658; of wh. two were in Capt. Beers' comp. in Philip's war 1675, and still, after his d. serving in Apr. 1676; (and JOHN, wh. is call. of Dedham, and prob. not one of these, was a corporal of Moseley's comp. and wound. in the gr. Narraganset fight, 19 Dec. 1675); Bethia, 23 Nov. 1661; and Isaac, 2 Feb. 1665, wh. d. 5 Oct. 1691. All the other five s. liv. from 74 to 98 yrs. Bethia m. 27 Feb. 1685, Nathaniel Bond; and Eliz. m. 1663, Job Hyde, and d. 28 Nov. 1685. IION, Abraham, a descend. in 4th generat. b. 23 Mar. 1720, was rep. for N. 20 yrs. begin. 1764; and parts of the ancesr. est. are now enjoy. by the seventh and eighth degr. * JOHN, Lynn, s. of the first John of the same, was rep. 1674, and four yrs. in succ. was a lieut. d. 26 Apr. 1695, had s. John; Thomas; Edward; Elisha, b. 5 Apr. 1657; Joseph, 1 Nov. 1661; and Benjamin, 16 Dec. 1665; at wh. time his w. was Eliz. JOHN, Dedham, s. of Thomas of the same, m. 8 Jan. 1672, Judith, d. of John Grey, had Judith, b. 21 Nov. 1673; Hannah, 5 Sept. 1675; John, 19 Nov. 1677; Thomas, 19 Nov. 1681; Robert, 11 Aug. 1683; and Hezekiah, 5 Aug. 1687, was prob. the freem. of 1690. JOHN, Rehoboth, m. 25 Apr. 1673, Abigail Titus, perhaps d. of John or Robert of the same, had John, b. 8 Sept. 1674, d. under two yrs.; Abiel, 30 Dec. 1676. One John, aged 15, came 1635, in the Abigail, and he may be the man of Lynn, or of Cambridge. JOHN, Barnstable, s. of Matthew, a physician, by first w. had Lydia, b. 1675; and by sec. w. Hannah, of Boston, whose surname is not found, had Bethia, b. Dec. 1687; John, Oct. 1689; and Reliance, 8 Sept. 1691. In this yr. he d. and his wid. m. 9 Dec. 1695, Capt. John Lathrop, it is thot. Of ano. at Barnstable, call. little JOHN (to disting. him from his son, John, s. of Matthew wh. was elder), when his w. Mchitable was adm. of the ch. 30 Sept. 1688, and was s. of that Samuel wh. was s. of Edward, we kn. his ch. bpt. were Samuel, Thomas, and Shubael, on 21 Oct. foll. and Thankful, 19 May after; he rem. to East Haddam, there had John, 10 Nov. 1697; Joseph, 1 Mar. 1700; Ben-

jamin, 20 Oct. 1701; and Melitable, 16 Apr. 1706; and perhaps others. JOHN, Newton, eldest s. of John of the same, freem. 1680 (ten yrs. bef. his f.), m. 1682, Abigail, perhaps d. of the sec. Thomas Boylston, had Sarah, b. 5 Oct. 1683; John, 2 Sept. 1685; Abigail, 8 Mar. 1688; James, 4 Feb. 1690; Hannah, 31 Aug. 1693; Isaac, 22 Nov. 1695; Jonathan, 13 Feb. 1698, d. soon; Jonathan, again, 28 Mar. 1700; Caleb, 24 Feb. 1702; and he m. 14 Oct. 1714, Margaret Hicks, and d. 1720. JONATHAN, Rehoboth, eldest s. of Robert of Salem, m. 14 Dec. 1664, Eliz. Wilnot, perhaps d. of Thomas, had Jonathan, b. 23 Dec. 1665; David, 11 Sept. 1667; Daniel, 6 Aug. 1669; Robert, and Thomas tw. 28 June 1671, of wh. one, if not both, d. soon; Robert, again, 2 Mar. 1673; Nathaniel, 1676; Eliz. 12 May 1678; Sarah, 23 Apr. 1680; Mary, 1 Oct. 1681; and Noah, 12 Feb. 1685. JONATHAN, Dedham, a. 1642, freem. 1671. JONATHAN, Dedham, the freem. of 1672, was, a. 1642, s. of Robert of Dorchester, by w. Mary had Mary, b. 20 Apr. 1670, prob. d. young; Samuel, 15 Feb. 1682; John, 3 Dec. 1684; Mary, again, 21 Feb. 1687; Joshua, 23 Jan. 1689, d. soon; and Joshua, again, 15 Feb. 1692. His w. d. 29 Mar. 1701; and he d. 1720. JONATHAN, Newton, s. of the first John of the same, m. Mindwell, d. of deac. James Trowbridge, d. 12 Aug. 1722, aged 74, without ch. and his wid. d. 1758, aged 96. He was freem. 1680; and gave most of his est. to Jonathan, s. of his br. Joseph. JOSEPH, Newton, s. of the first John of the same, freem. 1680, was under Turner in the Falls fight, 1676, m. 13 Feb. 1681, Lydia, d. of Edward Jackson, wh. d. 12 Jan. 1726, had John, b. 15 Dec. 1681; Joseph, 4 July 1685; Jonathan, 7 Jan. 1687; Lydia, 15 Feb. 1692; Edward, 7 Mar. 1694; Isaac, 16 Mar. 1698; and Eliz. 1 July 1701; and he d. 5 Jan. 1740. JOSHUA, Newton, br. of the preced. freem. 1680, m. 7 June 1679, Eliz. d. of John Ward, had only ds. Eliz. b. 22 Feb. 1680; Hannah, 8 July 1682; Experience, 5 Nov. 1685; and Mercy, 11 Mar. 1689. His w. d. 6 Sept. 1691. By 2d w. he had Abigail, a. 1697; Sarah; and Ruth; d. 1752. He was in 89th yr. when he m. 19 July 1742, Mary Dana, in her 75th for third w. but they had no ch. LANCELOT, New Haven 1643. MATTHEW, Plymouth, a. 1640, s. of Edward the first, b. in Eng. rem. to Barnstable 1652, a physician, appoint. surg. of the force of the col. 1673, a capt. 1676, as Thatcher says, and d. 1678. By w. Frances he had Mary, wh. m. 17 Apr. 1650, Ralph Jones; Eliz. wh. m. 1652, Moses Rowley; Samuel; and John; and by Hannah, had Ann, wh. m. her cous. Samuel Fuller. ROBERT, Dorchester 1640, freem. 2 June 1641, by w. Ann had Jonathan, b. 15 Aug. 1643; rem. to Dedham, there had Benoni, 16 June 1646; and perhaps his w. d. very soon; by w. Sarah, had Sarah, 21 Sept. 1647; John, 20 Nov. 1649; Patience, 22 Feb. 1652; and Mary.

1 Mar. 1654. His w. Sarah d. 1680, and he d. 14 Dec. 1688. ROBERT, Salem 1639, rem. to Rehoboth, there was freem. 1658, wh. he had visited perhaps fifteen yrs. bef. and may there have had one or more ch. of wh. we kn. only, that he calls Jonathan his eldest s. in a deed of 28 May 1696 for ld. in R. but had, also, Benjamin, old eno. to take deed of 1 Dec. 1679 for ho. and six acres at R. while he styles hims. in both, of Salem, bricklayer. Prob. he had been driv. in Philip's war from enjoym. of his est. and would encourage his s. to ascertain if it might be profit. in peace. By the rec. at R. his w. Sarah was bur. 14 Oct. 1676; and w. Margaret, wh. may not have been mo. of any ch. d. 30 Jan. 1700; and he d. 10 May 1706. Abigail, perhaps his d. m. at R. 16 Oct. 1679, Thomas Cushman. ROBERT, Lynn, freem. 1680, may be the same as preced. but not prob. SAMUEL, Plymouth 1620, one of the most valu. pilgrims of the Mayflower, the first physician that came to sett. in our country. He had been a deac. at least 8 yrs. at Leyden, tho. his w. Bridget, wh. came in the Ann 1623, with a ch. that, I think, liv. not long may have been m. but short time bef. he left Holland. He brot. serv. William Butten, a youth, wh. d. bef. reach. the coast; had Samuel, and Mercy, b. here, both after 22 May 1627, and both liv. 1650; and d. 1633, betw. 30 July, the date of his will, and end of Oct. foll. when it was pro. His w. Bridget liv. until 1664. SAMUEL, Plymouth, neph. of the preced. made exor. of his will, was s. of the first Edward, and by him brot. in the Mayflower 1620; after d. of his parents, liv. with the uncle, and at the div. of lds. 1624, was count. I presume, out of respect to f. and mo. for three persons; freem. of the col. 1634, rem. to Scituate, thence to Barnstable, at Scituate hav. m. 8 Apr. 1633, Jane, d. of Rev. John Lothrop, had Hannah, wh. m. 1 Jan. 1659, Nicholas Bonham; Samuel, wh. was bapt. at S. 11 Feb. 1638, and may be the one wh. d. at Rehoboth 15 Aug. 1676; Sarah, tho. b. at S. bapt. at B. 1 Aug. 1641, d. young; and b. at B. were Mary, 16 June 1644, wh. m. Joseph Williams, 18 Nov. 1674; Thomas, 18 May 1651; Sarah, again, 14 Dec. 1654, wh. m. a Crow; and John; beside one, 8 Feb. 1658, wh. d. at a fortnight; and he d. 31 Oct. 1683; one of the latest Mayflowers. SAMUEL, Plymouth, s. of the first Samuel, was a preach. but seems to have been slow to rem. prob. giving his time to pious care of his mo. refs. invit. to Rehoboth after d. of Newman, but preach. at Middleborough sixteen yrs. and at last was ord. there when the first ch. was gather. 20 Dec. 1694, and d. 17 Aug. foll. in 71st yr. if his gr.stone be correct. Of this the doubt is almost invinc. for it would carry his b. to 1623 or 4, at least, whereas in the div. of cattle, May 1627, his f. head of the eighth lot, counts only for hims. w. and cous. or neph. bef. ment. Still stranger, however, to our modern notions, seems the nomin. of him as exor. of will, when he could not be

8, and prob. was only 5 yrs. old. He had w. Eliz. but was not m. bef. 1650, ch. nam. in the will, pro. 1 Oct. 1695, Mercy, w. of Daniel Cole, perhaps his sec.; Samuel, b. 1659; Experience, w. of James Wood; John; Eliz. w. of Samuel Eaton; Hannah, w. of Eleazar Lewis, and Isaac, wh. was under age, as may have been the last d. By Lewis, in Hist. of Lynn, ed. 2, p. 111, this Samuel is call. br. of John, s. of Edward, and he speaks of his arr. in Boston 1630, so as to lead to confusion, if not starting from it. Deane, in Hist. of Scituate, seems almost as confus. as his br. Hist. of Lynn. The name of his w. is giv. in the ch. Hist. of M. as Brewster, and perhaps she was gr.d. of the noble William; she d. at Plymouth 4 Nov. 1713. Confusion, indeed, is often unavoidable. With all the aid deriv. from books, and the scrupulous dilig. of Otis, I am uncert. whether SAMUEL, Barnstable, s. of the first Samuel of the same, wh. m. Ann, d. of his uncle Matthew and had Matthew, Barnabas, Joseph, Benjamin, Desire, and Sarah, were the same man as SAMUEL, Rehoboth, wh. m. 17 Apr. 1673, Mary Ide, perhaps d. of Nicholas. SAMUEL, Barnstable, s. of Capt. Matthew, by w. Mary had Thomas, Jabez, Timothy, Matthias, wh. d. unm. Abigail, Ann, and Samuel, posthum. b. 1676. THOMAS, Salem, perhaps 1638, in that N. W. part now Middleton, had Thomas, John, Jacob, Benjamin, Joseph, Samuel, and Ruth. THOMAS, Woburn, m. 13 June 1643, Eliz. Tidd, had Thomas, b. 22 or 30 Apr. 1644; Eliz. 12 Sept. 1645; Ruth, 17 May 1648; Deborah, 12 May 1650; John, 1 Mar. 1653; Jacob, 14 May 1655; Joseph, 8 Aug. 1658; Benjamin, 15 Apr. 1660; and Samuel, 9 May 1662. Prob. he was of Salem 1670, but perhaps went back to W. and m. 25 Aug. 1684, Sarah, wid. of John Wyman, d. of Miles Nutt. * THOMAS, Dedham 1643, by w. Hannah Flower, m. 22 Nov. of that yr. had John, b. 1 Nov. 1644, d. soon; John, again, 28 Dec. 1645; Eliz. 1 Apr. 1648; Hannah, 9 Nov. 1650; Thomas, 26 Feb. 1652, d. young; Mary, 25 Mar. 1655; Samuel, 25 Apr. 1657; Sarah, 3 Sept. 1659; and Thomas, again, 23 June 1662; freem. not in 1653, as Farmer said, but perhaps in 1672, was ensign, rep. 1673, 9, and 86. His w. d. 11 Apr. 1672; and he d. 28 Sept. 1690, hav. made his will four days bef. Eliz. m. the sec. John Kingsbury of the same, and next, 17 Sept. 1672, m. third Michael Metcalf. THOMAS, Dedham, prob. s. of Thomas of the same, freem. 1690. THOMAS, perhaps s. of Thomas of Woburn, m. 25 Aug. 1684, Sarah Wyman, may hav. liv. at Danvers, and been freem. 1690. * WILLIAM, Ipswich 1635, came that yr. in the Abigail, aged 25, with John, perhaps his br. aged 15, may have had w. Frances, rem. 1639 to Hampton, rep. 1667, d. 26 May 1693. WILLIAM, Concord, appoint. gunsmith May 1637, to accomp. the troops against the Pequots; was a miller there 1639; had Hannah, b. 8 Aug. 1641; and his w. Eliz.

d. 24 July foll. Possib. he was freem. 2 June 1641. WILLIAM, Hampton, prob. s. of William of the same, freem. 1678, m. 22 June 1680, Susanna, d. of Isaac Perkins, and wid. of Isaac Buzzell of Salisbury. Nine of this name had been gr. at Harv. in 1829, nine at Yale, three at Dart. and twenty-two at other N. E. coll. and at Union, of wh. twelve were clerg.

FURBER, *WILLIAM, Dover 1643, b. a. 1614, came in the Angel Gabriel from Bristol, wreck. at Pemaquid in the great storm of Aug. 1635, was one of the witnesses to the *true* deed of the Ind. 1638 to Wheelwright, rep. 1648; had William, b. 1646, wh. was of Dover, as well as the f. 1684, and is the ancest. prob. of a num. line; beside Jethro, and three ds. Eliz. wh. m. John Dam; Susanna, wh. m. 5 May 1664, John Bickford; and Bridget, wh. m. Thomas Bickford. The w. of Dam was his sec. w. m. 9 Nov. 1664. John Bickford had ano. w. Temperance. Sometimes this name is Furbush.

FURBUSH, JOHN, Marblehead 1668. JONATHAN. See Forbush.

FURGESON. See Ferguson.

FURNELL, JOHN, Cambridge, b. a. 1607, by w. Mary had Sarah, b. Aug. 1638. || STRONG, Boston, scapboiler, call. also, ship-carpenter on adm. to the ch. freem. 10 May 1643, ar. co. 1651, wh. name Whitman made *Strange*; by w. Elinor had Eliz. b. 7, bapt. 14 May 1643; Mary, bapt. 10 Aug. 1645; Joanna, 26 Feb. 1647; Susanna, 14 Sept. 1652, d. in few days; John, 28 Jan. 1654; William, 1655. His wid. m. 1659, Michael Lambert. WILLIAM, Boston, perhaps br. of the preced. by w. Ellen (if the rec. be good), had Joanna, b. 9 Dec. 1652; William, 29 July 1654; and Joseph, 19 Jan. 1657.

FUSSELL, JOHN, Weymouth 1640. JOSHUA, Medfield 1649.

GAFFINGSLEY, JOHN, Kittery, made ens. of the comp. by the Comrs. of Mass. 1668. Hutch. I. 267. Hubbard, 600, has the name Gattery. GAGE, BENJAMIN, Haverhill, s. of John, was freem. 1669, m. 11 Oct. 1671, Prudence, d. of Thomas Leaver, and he liv. not long, for his wid. m. 6 Apr. 1674, Samuel Stickney. JOHN, Boston, came, prob. in the fleet with Winth. being in the first half hundred mem. of the ch. was of Co. Suffolk, Eng. rem. to Ipswich 1633, among the first sett. was freem. 4 Mar. 1634, had Benjamin, Daniel, Jonathan, Samuel, and prob. Thomas. His w. Ann d. June 1658; and he m. Nov. 1658, Sarah, wid. of Robert Keyes, I believe, wh. surv. him; and he rem. 1664 to Rowley; but Coffin says, wid. Sarah d. at Newbury, 7 July 1680. JOSIAH, Haverhill, freem. 1682. SAMUEL, Haverhill, s. of the preced. freem. 1671, m. 10 June 1674, Faith, d. of William Stickney. THOMAS, Yarmouth 1649, of wh. I kn. only that he next yr. lost a s. THOMAS, Beverly, br. of Samuel, by w. Sarah had Thomas, b. 1678; William, 1680; beside

four ds. all at B. but after his w. d. he rem. to Rowley and m. sec. w. Eliz. wid. of Humphrey Hobson, d. of Ezekiel Northend, had Eliz. b. 1698. He is ancest. by the former w. I presume, of most of the fams. in R. of this name, six of wh. had been, in 1829, gr. at the N. E. coll.

GAGERT, JOHN, New London, came prob. with his f. deac. William, to Boston, 1630, and may have been at Hampton 1640; perhaps accomp. young John Winthrop, when he went to plant the Pequot conquest, a. 1645, had w. Eliz. named in his will, yet she may not have been mo. of the ch. either six b. bef. rem. or three after he went, 1660, to Norwich; John, Sept. 1647; Eliz. 1649; Sarah, 1651; Hannah, 1653, d. young; Samuel, 1654; Bethia, 1657; William, 1662, d. young; Lydia, 1663; Hannah, again, 1666; and Mary, 1671. He was freem. 1675, constable of Norwich 1681, and d. 10 Dec. 1703. His eldest s. d. bef. and the will ment. only s. Samuel, and "my six s. that m. my ds." John Allyn, h. of Eliz. Daniel Brewster, Jeremiah Ripley, Simon Huntington, Joshua Abel, and Caleb Forbes; but this order does not relate to the priority of the ds. nor can I appropriate the ds. to their hs. exc. the eldest of them, after long inq. A descend. of sixth generat. was town clk. 1845. Caulkins, Hist. 103. WILLIAM, Charlestown, a surg. came in the fleet with Winth. was by him reckon. of his fam. a Suffolk man, made deac. of the first ch. now of Boston, and d. 20 Sept. 1630. Rev. William, a descend. Y. C. 1721, was ord. 27 May 1725 at 2d ch. of Lebanon.

GAINES, or GAYNES, DANIEL, Lancaster 1660, was k. by the Ind. 10 Feb. 1676. Willard, Hist. HENRY, Lynn, freem. 14 Dec. 1639. SAMUEL, Lynn, m. 7 Apr. 1665, Ann Wright; was of Hartford 1667, rem. to Haddam, had a fam. and there the name is still found. One, perhaps this progenit. d. 1700, at Glastonbury. THOMAS, Lynn 1640, may have been f. of the preced.

GALE, ABRAHAM, Watertown, s. of Richard, m. 3 Sept. 1673, Sarah, d. of Nathan Fiske, had Abraham; Sarah, b. 15 Feb. 1675, d. young; Richard, 25 Sept. 1677; Hopedill, Dec. 1678, d. soon; Mary, 27 Mar. 1680, d. young; Abigail, 12 Mar. 1682, d. at 14 yrs.; Mercy, 16 Sept. 1689; Ebenezer, 30 Apr. 1686; John, 23 Apr. 1687; Mary, again, bapt. Apr. 1689; Sarah, again, b. 29 Aug. 1694; Jonas, bapt. 14 Nov. 1697; Joshua, b. 22 Feb. 1697; Eliz. and Lydia, tw. 9 July 1699; and Abigail; d. 1718. AMBROSE, Salem, had there bapt. Benjamin, and Eliz. 17 May 1663; Charity, 17 June 1664; and Ambrose, 1665, was one of the founders of the ch. at Marblehead, and liv. there 1674. Eliz. m. Thomas Root of Boston. BARTHOLOMEW, Salem, m. 1662, Martha, d. of Robert Lemon, wh. d. the same yr. and he m. Mary Bacon, had

William White

1590-1620

323

*The First Comprehensive Guide
to Plymouth Colony*

This is the first truly complete treatment of the history and genealogy of Plymouth Colony. It includes a concise history of the colony, both chronologically and topically, and more than 300 biographical sketches of its inhabitants. Richly documented and illustrated with maps and photographs, the three-dimensional *Plymouth Colony: Its History & People, 1620-1691* was written for historians and genealogists alike and provides an in-depth view of this important epoch in American history.

The researcher will find the verbatim transcriptions of important contemporary documents in the eleven appendices invaluable, and the annotated bibliography clearly describes the abundance of primary and secondary literature on Plymouth Colony. Mr. Stratton's work has set a new standard worthy of emulation by all serious scholars.

ISBN-0-916489-13-2

Plymouth Colony

Stratton



RG
974.402
S

*Plymouth
Colony*

*Its History & People
1620-1691*

by Eugene Aubrey Stratton



Alice (Coles) Freeman, and he died 2 November 1682 at Sandwich, Plymouth Colony. He married (1) at Cowfold, Sussex, on 16 June 1617 Bennett Hodsoll, daughter of John and Faith (_____) (Bacon) Hodsoll, who died in 1630 at Pulborough and (2) Elizabeth, whose surname is not known, but who may have been a widow Perry. He sailed for New England with four surviving children and some other people with his surname on the *Abigail* in July 1635, and he settled first at Saugus (Lynn) in the Bay Colony. He was evidently the leader of the Saugus men who moved in 1637 to Sandwich, and it was to him that a deed was granted as agent for the others. He became an Assistant in Plymouth Colony, but was not reelected in 1646, and Edward Winslow wrote to Gov. John Winthrop in Boston that "I suppose the country left [Freeman] out in regard of his professed Anabaptistry & Separacon from the Churches" (*MHS Collections*, 4th Series, 6:178). The *Davies-Gates* account shows also that he was of an unorthodox nature for his time and place, and was later sympathetic to the Quakers. He had business interests of his own in New England, and he had a power of attorney in behalf of his brother-in-law, John Beauchamp, who had continued as one of the four London Undertakers after the other Adventurers sold out their interests.

His will dated 21 June 1682, proved 2 November 1682, named his three "sons," Edmond Freeman, John Freeman, and Edward Perry (whose wife Mary has sometimes been assumed to have been a daughter of Edmond Freeman, but there is no evidence for this, and thus Perry may have been the son of Freeman's second wife). Also named were his daughter Elizabeth Ellis, and his grandsons Matthias Freeman and Thomas Paddy (*MD* 12:248). His son Edmond married (1) Rebecca Prence, daughter of Thomas and (2) Margaret Perry. His son John married Mercy Prence, daughter of Alice Freeman, who married William Paddy, and a daughter Bennett and a son Nathaniel, both of whom died young. For additional comments on the Perrys, see Lydia B. (Pinney) Brownson and Maclean McLean, "Ezra Perry of Sandwich, Mass. (c. 1625-1689)," *NEHGR* 115:86.

FULLER, _____ – The wife of Edward Fuller, who accompanied him on the 1620 *Mayflower*, she has sometimes been called Ann Fuller, but there is no evidence that that was her name, nor is her maiden name known. She died during the early months at Plymouth.

FULLER, EDWARD – It has been assumed in the past that Edward Fuller, unlike his brother Samuel, was not in Leiden, but Jeremy D. Bangs in *MQ* 51:58 cites a contemporary Leiden document to show that in fact he was there. Edward arrived at Plymouth on the 1620 *Mayflower* with his wife (see above) and son Samuel, q.v., and both he and his wife died shortly after arrival. Another son, Matthew, came to Plymouth Colony later; though there have been claims that Matthew was not Edward's son, there is good indirect evidence for the relationship—see Bruce Campbell MacGunnigle, Robert M. Sherman, and Robert S. Wakefield, "Was Matthew Fuller of Plymouth Colony a Son of Pilgrim Edward Fuller?"

TAG 61:194. Matthew became a captain and a colony leader. He married a Frances, whose surname is unknown, and they had Samuel, John, Mary, Anne, and Elizabeth, as is shown by Matthew's will (*MD* 13:7). Additional information on Edward Fuller can be found in Homer W. Brainard, "Edward Fuller and his Descendants" and Francis H. Fuller, "John Fuller of Redenhall, England, and his Descendants in New England," *NYGBR* 33:171, 211. For other published material, see Edward's brother Samuel.

FULLER, SAMUEL – It has been accepted that Samuel Fuller and his brother Edward, q.v., were the sons of Robert Fuller, a butcher of Redenhall with Harleston Parish, County Norfolk; however, current research may put this in question, and, if so, the results will appear in a forthcoming TAG article. Samuel married (1) Alice Glascock (2) Alice Carpenter, q.v., and (3) Bridget Lee (*MD* 8:129). Of his children by his third wife, only son Samuel is known to have descendants, and the first five generations of the Samuel Fuller family in America are given in *MF* 1. The senior Samuel Fuller was among the English Separatists living in Leiden. He came to Plymouth on the 1620 *Mayflower*, his wife Bridget coming later in the 1623 *Anne*. He was the colony's physician and surgeon, and he is frequently mentioned in the text. See the articles given under his brother Edward, Herbert and Florence Fuller, *The Fuller Family in England and America*, 2nd ed. (1971), covers the families of both Samuel and Edward, but is known to have errors. Additional articles of interest on the Fuller families are Francis H. Fuller, "Early New England Fullers," and "Fullers of Redenhall, England," *NEHGR* 55:192, 410.

FULLER, SAMUEL – A son of Edward, Samuel accompanied his parents on the 1620 *Mayflower* to Plymouth. He married Jane Lothrop, daughter of Rev. John Lothrop (*MD* 16:129). Though the 1627 cattle division list should have covered the senior Samuel Fuller plus two second generation Samuel Fullers, the son of the senior Samuel and the son of his brother Edward, only one second generation Samuel is actually on the list, and this most likely is Samuel, son of Edward, who was indisputably living in 1627. The evidence for Samuel, son of Samuel, being in Plymouth in 1627 is the inscription on his gravestone, which shows him dying in his seventy-first year on 17 August 1695, thus having him born ca. 1624. However, gravestone inscriptions frequently contain some error, and if this one overstated his age by a few years, he might not even have been born by the 1627 division. Samuel Fuller, the son of Edward, died at Barnstable 31 October 1683. He dated his will 29 October 1683, inventory 14 November 1683, and in it he named his sons Samuel and John, and his daughters Elizabeth Taylor, Hannah Bonham, Mary Williams, and Sarah Crowe (*MD* 2:237). He had other children who died young. His daughter Hannah, who married Nicholas Bonham, moved with her husband to Piscataway, New Jersey, thus bringing the Edward Fuller line there at an early date.

GARDINER, RICHARD – Bradford wrote that Richard Gardiner, a 1620 *Mayflower* passenger, "became" a seaman and died in England or at

His will, dated 23 March 1662/63, inventory 8 February 1664/65, mentioned his wife; his sons Caleb, Jedidah, Benjamin, Bernard, and Joshua; his sons-in-law Joseph Benjamin and Edward Coleman; his daughters Margaret Coleman and Jemima; and his granddaughter Abigail Benjamin (MD 16:124). Three sons predeceased him: two sons named Thomas baptized at Thorncombe, one of whom must have died young. The other, who came to New England with him, appeared on the 1643 ATBA list, and died without known issue, before his father made his will; and Jobaniah, who died young. Son Joshua married Abigail Linnell; Jedidah married Hannah Wing; Benjamin married (1) Jane Warren (2) Sarah Walker, and (3) widow Hannah Whetstone; and Caleb, whose wife's name is unknown. Daughter Margaret married Edward Coleman, and Jemima married Joseph Benjamin. Additional information on the Lombard family can be found in the Amos Otis Papers, which are not well documented.

LONG, ROBERT — Robert Long arrived at Plymouth in 1623 and was in the 1623 land division sharing three acres of land with Patience Brewster and Fear Brewster. He was not in the 1627 division.

LOTHROP, JOHN — E. B. Huntington, *A Genealogical Memoir of the Lothrop Family in This Country Embracing . . .* (Ridgefield, Conn., 1884), is a well presented family history, especially for John Lothrop's life in England and America. Lothrop's family can be traced back a number of generations in England, and his own baptism is recorded at Eton, Yorkshire, 20 December 1584. He graduated from Cambridge University with a B.A. in 1605, and M.A. in 1609. He became curate of the church at Egerton, County Kent from ca. 1611 to 1623. In 1623 he was called to succeed Rev. Henry Jacob (who had left for Virginia) at the First Independent Church in Southwark, Surrey. Independent worship being illegal, Lothrop's services were conducted in secret. In 1632 he was imprisoned, but released on bail in 1634. Nathaniel Morton (*New England's Memoriall*, p. 140-41) relates some of his background, including the death of his first wife in England. Huntington, p. 25, quotes from Governor Winthrop's *Journal* under date of 18 September 1634 "The Griffin and another ship now arriving with about 200 passengers. Mr. Lathrop and Mr. Sims, two godly ministers coming in the same ship." That same year Lothrop went to Scituate, where he formed the first church there, and then in 1639 the church divided and Lothrop went with the group that settled at Barnstable, becoming minister there, too. His records of some activities and events at Scituate and Barnstable are in NEHGR 9:279-87, 10:37-43; also see text. Two of his letters of 1638 to Governor Prence mention in rather vague terms the forthcoming move from Scituate (Huntington, p. 28-32). One of the letters is also signed by Anthony Aniball, _____ (no doubt Henry) Cobb, and _____ (no doubt Isaac) Robinson "In behalf of the church." He became a freeman on 7 June 1637 (PCR 1:60).

He married (1) Hannah House (sister of Samuel House, q.v.) and (2) Ann _____, who has variously been thought to be a Hammond or a Dimmock; since his son Barnabas was born 6 June 1636, he married his

second wife probably in 1635 (see Torrey, and Wakefield, *Marriages*). His will (MD 11:42) dated 10 August 1653, inventory 8 December 1653, names his sons Thomas, John (in England), and Benjamin and daughters Jane and Deborah; "to the rest of my Children both mine and my wives my will is that every of them shall have a Cow." His children were to have a choice of one of his books each, and the rest were to be sold, with the money divided among them. Some of his lands were to be sold, with the money to be divided among the children "that have the least portions." The wording of the will is unfortunate, for it leaves open the question as to how many children survived him. There is a possibility he may have been the father of Elizabeth, the unwanted wife of John Williams, q.v. PCR 4:107 shows that on 3 October 1665 "Mr. Barnabas Laythorpe hath seen cause in the behalfe of his sister [Elizabeth Williams] and those related to her to revive the former complaint [against John Williams]." For reasons too lengthy to give in detail, Barnabas Laythorpe could only be the son of Rev. John Lothrop, and sister in this context could only mean blood sister or sister-in-law. Since Barnabas's wife was Susanna Clark, daughter of Thomas Clark, q.v., and there was no Elizabeth in the Thomas Clark family, the term probably meant blood sister. Otis/Swift, *Barnstable Families*, devotes some fifty pages to Lothrop and his descendants, but is no well documented. See also NEHGR 84:437.

LUCE, HENRY — A "Harke" Luce is on the 1643 ATBA for Scituate but no relationship is known. Henry Luce served on a jury 31 October 1664 to divide land in Scituate (PCR 4:139). Banks in his *History of Martha's Vineyard* 3:246-47, states that Henry was born ca. 1645 and brought up in Wales he married Rebecca Munson, and settled in Martha's Vineyard, being the immigrant ancestor of the numerous Luce family found in Martha's Vineyard and elsewhere. Banks also wrote that Henry and Harke Luce were from Horton, Gloucestershire, and settled first at Scituate. Whether Banks is entirely or partly wrong on Henry Luce cannot be determined; however it is certain that Henry Luce's wife was Remember, daughter of Lawrence and Judith (Dennis) Litchfield of Scituate. A court order of 27 October 1671 required Josias Litchfield "without any further delay" to make payment to his sisters Remember Lewes and Dependance Litchfield from the estate of his brother Experience Litchfield (PCR 5:154). The will of William Denni (MD 14:113), dated 16 February 1649/50, proved 5 March 1656/57, name his daughter Judith (then remarried to William Peaks) and Remember Litchfield, Dependance Litchfield, and Experience Litchfield, all under age and unmarried; the will of William Peaks (*Ply. Colony PR* 4:2-41), dated 31 October 1682, declaring that he was first "penitent, and Sorry from the botome of my hart for my Sines past," names his sons Israel, Eleazer, and William; wife (Judith); "daughter-in-law [stepdaughter] Dependance Litchfield;" and "Grandchildren experience Luce and Remember Luce," two of the children of Henry and Remember Luce—see also Gerald Jame Parson, "The Will of William Dennis of Scituate, Mass.," TAG 33:153. For their information on the Litchfield family can be found in Wilford J

APPOINTED TRUSTEE

The Governor General has reappointed as a Trustee of the Mayflower Society House Endowment Fund, effective Feb. 1, 1968, Spencer H. Brewster, 309 Genesee St., Auburn, N. Y.

CORRECTION — Please

In your August 1968 Quarterly, p. 71, column one, in the paragraph beginning "Peter Thompson Bosworth," please delete the name of John Alden.

WILLIAM WHITE'S FAMILY

by Robert M. and Ruth Wilder Sherman

William¹ White was one of the Mayflower passengers who did not survive the first long hard winter. He died, 21 Feb. 1621, leaving a widow Susanna, a son Resolved² about 5 years old, and a son Peregrine² who had been born aboard the Mayflower.

The marriage of William White, wool comber, is recorded in Leyden, Holland, 16 Feb. 1612 to Ann Fuller, a probable relative of Edward and Samuel Fuller of the Mayflower, BUT NOT A SISTER. (NEHGR 110:182, 113:236) The name Ann may be an error, for it appears only in the marriage record, and William's wife is always called Susanna in New England records.

Resolved² and Peregrine² were the only children known to have survived, as shown in the letter of 1623 from Edward Winslow, then in England, to his uncle. (NEHGR 109:240)

"To his much respected Uncle Mr. Robert Jackson these be given.

"Sir

"Though unknowne I remember a kinsmans love unto you desiring to be remembered to my father-in-law, to whom as to yourselfe my wife remembreth her duty etc. Almost two yeares since I wrote to my father-in-law declaring the death of his sonn White & the continued health of his daughter and her two children; also how that by Gods providence she was become my wife, whom (praised be God) I left in health at Plymouth in new England the 10th September last past my selfe being now at London upon some business between the Plantation there & the company of Adventurers & the Councell here and am to returne againe about Decembr. next.

"Having therefore a fit opportunity I thought it but my duty to write unto you sorrowing that I have not time to acquaint you with our proceedings, but promise you a large relation thereof before my departure. In the generall we have undergone many straites & difficulties & yet have many hopes of future comfortes. My wife hath had one childe by me, but it pleased him that gave it to take it againe unto himselfe: I left her with childe at my departure (whom God preserve) but hope to be with her before her delivery. I never yet received any letter from any of her friendes; onely I heare that some are now gone over which I missed. I shall be very glad to heare from you before my returne. If you write direct your letters to Mr. James Sherly haberdasher of small wares att his howse in crooked lane or at his shop at the horseshoe on London Bridge. I pray you send worde how my father in law doth & where he liveth, also concerning my wives brother & sisters to whom I pray you commend our best affections Thus expecting your answer I take leave this 30th of October 1623

Your loving kinsman

Edward Winslow"

[The widow Susanna White had become the first bride in Plymouth Colony when she married (12 May 1621) the widower Edward Winslow. (MD 30:3) Their son Josiah was born in 1629 and was to be the first native-born Governor of the Colony.]

RESOLVED WHITE

Resolved² White was born about 1615/16 in Holland, and married 6 Nov. 1640 Judith Vassal, daughter of William and Ann (King) Judith was from a prominent family and no doubt her outspoken opposition to the persecution of the Quakers stemmed from her father's vigorous efforts to achieve religious toleration at both Plymouth and Boston, in the face of strong opposition from the very leaders who had so demanded it for their newly founded colonies. William Vassal, a settler of Scituate and a proprietor of Virginia,* spent his last years on his plantation in Barbadoes, where his will was discovered less than 50 years ago.

Resolved² lived in Scituate, visited his father-in-law in Barbadoes in 1657, moved to Marshfield near his brother Peregrine in 1662, and served in King Philip's War in 1676. When his wife Judith died in 1670, Resolved broke up his family, with William's staying with the Winslows (and was with Josiah Winslow's family as late as 1675); Samuel's was already married; Resolved died within a week of his mother; Anna and Elizabeth's apparently went to live with their aunt in Concord; and Josiah presumably went with his father to Salem. John and Susannah are unaccounted for.

In 1674, Resolved² married Abigail, widow of William Lord, and probably spent his remaining years in Salem. He died between 1690 and 1694. Of his eight children, William and Resolved never married; John was last known alive in 1650; and Susanna is rumored to have married (proof unfound) one Uriah Johnson. Membership in the Mayflower Society has been obtained through each of the remaining four children: Samuel, who took a wife Rebecca and lived in Sandwich and Rochester; Anna who married John Hayward and resided in Concord; Elizabeth who married Obadiah Wheeler and also made her home in Concord; and Josiah who married Remember Read and lived in Salem, Danvers and Boxford.

*Descendants are eligible for several "southern" societies, such as the Jamestowne Society.

This inscribed boulder lies on the Peregrine White Farms Homestead in Marshfield, Mass. Present owner, Dr. Eshan Allan Brown, writes that previous owners have sold off the interiors of the house, supposed to have been built by Peregrine, and little remains but some wide board flooring.

All the constitution guarantees is the pursuit of happiness. You have to catch up with a yourself. — Benjamin Franklin

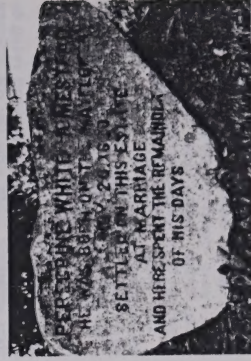
PEREGRINE WHITE

Peregrine² White, the first white child born in New England, and the younger and more well-known son of William and Susanna White, was born aboard the Mayflower at Provincetown, between 7 and 10 Dec. 1620. (N.S.) He moved to Green Harbor with his step-father's family after 1632. He married before 16 March 1648/9 Sarah Bassett, daughter of William and Elizabeth and they commenced housekeeping on Marshfield land given by Edward Winslow.

Members have joined the Society through each of Peregrine's six children who lived to adulthood: Daniels married Hannah Hunt and stayed in Marshfield; Jonathan's married Hester Nickerson and a second wife named Elizabeth and lived in Yarmouth; Peregrine's married first Susanna and then Mary and Sarah's married Thomas Young and lived in nearby Scituate; Sylvanus married Deborah and resided in Scituate; Mercy's married William Sherman and stayed in Marshfield.

Peregrine² not only fought the Pequot Indians, but also the advances of religion, until at the age of 78 he was admitted to the Marshfield church. (MD 31:145) He was the last survivor of all the passengers who arrived at Plymouth Harbor on board the Mayflower, dying in Marshfield 20 July 1704, aged 83 years and 8 months, burial spot unknown. (MD 24:128)

The original of his will is at Pilgrim Hall in Plymouth and a photo and transcription of the document may be seen in the Mayflower Descendant (MD 1:129) It is interesting that his is one of only three original wills of Mayflower passengers still in existence. London preserves that of his step-father Edward Winslow, and Suffolk Registry of Probate (Boston, Mass.) the will of Mary (Chilton) Winslow, wife of Edward's brother John.



RUTH W. SHERMAN

A WILLIAM WHITE LINE

From time to time new lineages will appear in these pages in hopes of making it easier and less expensive for prospective members to prove their descent from Mayflower passengers. They will all be lines approved by the Historian General since the printing of the 1960 Mayflower Index, and will thus complement those volumes.

The following descent from William White appears in the Mayflower Index only through generation four. (Printed with permission of the member.)

R. I. No. 768

1. WILLIAM WHITE
2. PEREGRINE WHITE
3. JONATHAN WHITE
b. Marshfield, Mass.
d. 4 June 1658
d. Yarmouth, Mass.
14 July 1736-
22 Feb. 1737
4. ESTHER (WHITE) JOYCE
d. Warwick, R. I.
23 July 1738 ae 53
5. ELIZABETH (DRAKE) COREY
b. E. Greenwich, R. I.
1 Mar. 1724/5
6. ESTHER COREY
b. No. Kingstown, R. I.

General No. 30683

- m. SARAH BASSETT
- m. (1) HESTER NICKERSON
Yarmouth, Mass.
2 Feb. 1682
- m. (2) JOHN DRAKE
b. Weymouth, Mass.
30 Sept. 1694
d. Warwick, R. I.
21 June 1733
- m. (2) THOMAS COREY
E. Greenwich, R. I.
15 Feb. 1748
- m. EBENEZER SLOCUM
b. c. 1750
d. Waterboro, N. B.
1827
- m. GARDINER CLARKE
b. 7 June 1764
d. 1815

- m. JAMES HULING
b. No. Kingstown, R. I.
17 Nov. 1784
bur E. Greenwich, R. I.
d. 10 Oct. 1865
- m. RHODA KING COLLINS
b. Smithfield, R. I.
25 Mar. 1816
d. No. Kingstown, R. I.
31 Dec. 1893
- m. SARAH CAROLINE TOURGEON
b. No. Kingstown, R. I.
18 Feb. 1848
d. No. Kingstown, R. I.
22 Apr. 1926
- m. MARY ELIZA KENYON
WILLIAM HERMAN SCHMIDT
- m. FLORENCE ESTHER HULING
- m. EDWIN WILSON HULING
- m. ERIE WILSON HULING
b. No. Kingstown, R. I.
25 Aug. 1848
d. Providence, R. I.
21 June 1904
- m. RUTH SLOCUM
b. Portsmouth, R. I.
c. 1772
d. No. Kingstown, R. I.
1798
- m. ELIZABETH CLARKE
b. No. Kingstown, R. I.
27 Sept. 1790
d. E. Greenwich, R. I.
29 Jan. 1873
- m. GARDINER CLARKE HULING
b. No. Kingstown, R. I.
19 Dec. 1809
d. No. Kingstown, R. I.
6 Mar. 1893
- m. ERIE WILSON HULING
b. No. Kingstown, R. I.
25 Aug. 1848
d. Providence, R. I.
21 June 1904
- m. EDWIN WILSON HULING
- m. FLORENCE ESTHER HULING

References: Mayflower Index Nos. 37726, 37668; Boston Marriages p. 81; Drake Fam. Bk. I, S. Drake (1896) pp. 4, 297, May, Desc. 9-122; NEHRG 6:150; Weymouth, Mass. V.R. Hist. Weymouth by Chamberlain (1923) 3:206; E. Greenwich V.R. pp. 23, 113 (Original record says Drake, not Drake); No. Kingstown V.R. pp. 17 (mar. record of Thos.'s John gives Thos.'s death date), 29, 82; Short Hist. of Slocums by C. E. Slocum (1882) p. 14 and (1908) p. 124; Clarke Fams. of R.I. by Geo. A. Morrison, Jr. (1902) p. 88; R.I. 1st census Bk. 4, p. 56; Snow's Index to Prov. V.R.; No. Kingstown V.R. (in town clerk's

DIRECTORY CHANGES

(since August issue)

ARIZONA

Mr. Mrs. Florence Billings Jackson
300 W. 28th St., Box 36, Yuma 85364
Dep. Gov. Douglas Channing Howard
6011 E. 25th St., Tucson 85711

SOUTH DAKOTA

Dep. Gov. Gen. Dr. M. Wayne Myers
Hudson 57034

UTAH

Asst. Gen. (Nominee) Gerald G. Smith
935 Diestel Rd., Salt Lake City 84105
Gov. Mrs. Walter E. Boyden
1000 Military Dr., Salt Lake City 84105
Dep. Gov. Mrs. Virginia P. Frobes
1180 E. 2700 So., Salt Lake City 84106
Sec. Mrs. Neuman C. Petty
1680 E. 45 So., Salt Lake City 84117
Elder Gordon B. Hinckley
3703 So. 2700 E., Salt Lake City 84109
Capt. William L. Cone
1344 Emerson Ave., Salt Lake City 84105
Compact Chmn. E. E. House
161 First Ave., #35, Salt Lake City 84103
Publ. Chmn. Mrs. Richard P. Condie
2304 Berkeley St., Salt Lake City 84109

WASHINGTON

Asst. Gen. Mrs. William H. Weaver
654 W. Olympic Pl., Seattle 98119

CAN YOU HELP LOCATE THESE MISSING MEMBERS?

If you can offer information leading to the present address of the following Mayflower members whose state society mail is not reaching them, please contact the Editor. (Thank you for helping us locate Messrs. Hunter, Bradford and Buckley, August issue.)
Mrs. Richard M. Carey, 2426 Dugan Ct., Davenport, Iowa.
Mrs. Bruce Clark, Bay Point, Sarasota, Florida.
Mrs. Richard E. Darling, 9600 No. Lake Dr., Milwaukee, Wisc.
Mr. Leonard S. Dooten, USA, 130 Martin Ave., Palo Alto, Calif.
F. Stetson Eddy, Jr., 16 Fox Meadow Lane, Wayland, Mass.
Mr. Edward F. Fanjoy, Jr., 705 S. Wilcox St., Johnston, N.Y.
Mrs. Lancelot L. Farrar, Jr., 8 Perry Lane, Menlo Park, Calif.
Mrs. James R. Drumwright, 2044 Green St., San Francisco, Calif.
Ralph H. Estes, 1130 Sorolla Ave. Coral Gables, Fla.

FIVE YEAR PLANS AND THE FIVE GENERATIONS PROJECT

A number of "knotty" genealogical problems must be solved between now and 1970 if the first volume of the Five Generations Families is to appear in that anniversary year. The Project Committees feels that well-experienced genealogists who specialize in these problems and particular geographical areas could expedite the work, however such assistance could wipe out the research funds on hand. Sizeable donations (\$100 or more) would greatly assist.

The Five Year Plans

The Indiana Society has had its own Five Year Plan for the Project. They are donating \$500 over a five year period, via annual payments of \$100.

The Rhode Island Society has made a donation in a distinctive manner which it hopes might inspire other state societies. They have donated one dollar for each original lineage paper filed with the Historian General over the past Five Calendar Years (1963-67 inclusive), a total of \$123. If all the societies did this, the research fund would double.

What has your Society done?

PIETERSKERKHOF—THE LEYDEN OF THE PILGRIMS

by Ruth T. Huestis

Pieterskerkhof was, to the Pilgrims in Leyden, what Beacon Hill became to their descendants in Boston. It was an old section of the city, a section in which old buildings still stood and still were in active use, though not always the use for which they had been originally intended. It was a severely overcrowded section. All the streets, cross streets and canals shown here were solidly lined with buildings. For the most part, these were row houses, economically placed gable-end to the street and rising three or four stories before the high-pitched roof provided a story or two more.

There were back yards in the interiors of the blocks, often laid out patterned gardens, sometimes sheltered by trees. In the case of the Falyde Bagynenlof, little garden plots lay at the courtyard doors; the large open space—presumably lawn—was dominated by the University's Library and the backs of the houses appear to have been more desirable than their street faces.

In the case of the little pie-shaped wedge along the Rapenburg between the Falyde Bagynen and what was apparently the Donckere Gracht before it went underground, there was scarcely an air shaft but the Dutch planted a garden. Wherever they could find a couple of feet of unbuild-upon land in those back yards, at least herbs were grown.

As on Beacon Hill in our day, some of the more pretentious houses were occupied by single families and some may have served groups as clubhouses. Some were schools or studios and in this craft-active city, practically every house contained a loom, pillows for the making of lace, or a corner workshop of some sort.

The Rapenburg was the largest and handsomest canal in the city, a high fashion address. Perhaps that is why it became the Steen Schuyr after it passed under the four-arched bridge at the head of the Vliet.

Leyden was suffering a population explosion in the years the Pilgrims lived there. Building was rapidly devouring every inch of available land, and older houses were being converted into what we would call multiple-dwelling units. Dr. Dexter, on the spot in the mid-19th century, used the term tenements and that, in all likelihood, would be the more precise description of what they were in the Pilgrims' day. Census rolls list extraordinary numbers of persons as living in this area, many of them designated as "too poor to pay taxes."

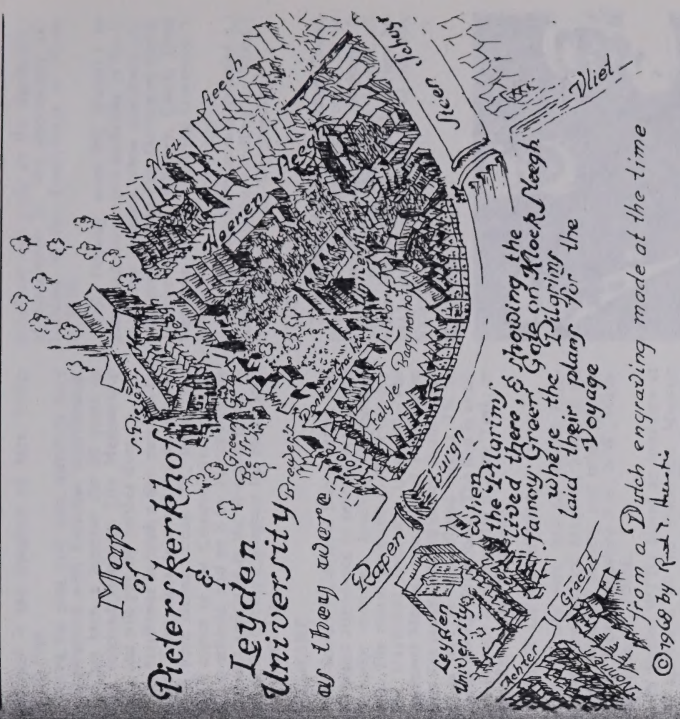
This was not, however, by any means the most overcrowded or most forlorn section of the city. A block and a half beyond New Steegh—and on the opposite side of the Steen Schuyr—was Stinck Steegh—what being translated means exactly what it appears to mean: in the words of mid-Victoria but thoroughly realistic Dr. Dexter, Stenck Lane.

This was the first Leyden address of William Brewster (not yet an Elder). From a house in this street he buried a child in 1609, which would have been promptly after his arrival in town. He moved to a better neighborhood, apparently as soon as he possibly could, before he lost more of the "many children in his care." He had severely strained, if not totally exhausted, his means in helping others get over to Holland from England.

There is no record that he ever lived in Pieterskerkhof, but he did have his presence there, in the ell of Brewer's house, and he may have maintained his family there. Those were the days when he was engaged in subversive activities, days when it was expedient to conceal his residence and the whereabouts of his family. One of the most extraordinary facets of the whole Pilgrim story was the success with which this was accomplished, the way that in the face of active, even frantic, government search for the Elder, no one, not even a child, revealed where he or his family might be. Even today it is not known where they may have been. Educated guesses have been ventured by various historians, archivists, and the like, all sufficiently worthy in the matter to make their guesses worthy of consideration, but the guesses do not agree.

Brewster's type faces were found in the garret of Brewer's house and impounded there; "the garret door nailed in two places and the seal of the said officer impressed in green wax over paper and placed upon the lock and nails."

Green, hue of hope, symbol of spring and of life and of growth, seems to have been the dominant color of Pieterskerkhof, or at least of that part of Klock Steegh between the Donckere Gracht and Heeren Steegh. Brewer's house was known as the Green House, and the house purchased in 1611 for "the English congregation in this city" had been long known as the Groene Poort—sometimes translated as the Green Door but now euphemistically known as the Green Gate.



When the house known as the Green Gate was bought, John Robinson and his associate purchasers bought, as well, not only the yard behind the house (i.e. to the rear of the Falyde Bagynen) but also the gardens back of all its neighbors on the west as far as the Donckere Gracht ("and next to it is the Falyde Bagynen").

One of the Pastor's co-purchasers was a carpenter—a contractor, a builder—and eventually, this extensive garden sprouted no less than twenty-one houses. Most of these seem to have been built after the Pastor's death, indeed not until after the carpenter bought out John Robinson's widow and the other co-purchasers in 1621. Dr. Dexter reported however, that one "addition" was built within a year of purchase, an "addition" he assumed for a Meeting House.

This helps to set the date of the only known picture of a Pilgrim scene as it looked when the Pilgrims were living in it, but it also complicates identification of some of the buildings included in that picture. Was the "addition" the building, broadside

to the street next door to the Green Gate (or even attached to it) on the west? Or is the building set back from the street between Brewer's and his next neighbor to the east? The answer to that is, I believe, available and I am on the trail of it.

There will still be unanswered questions in relation to the picture itself: Why did the map of Leyden, published in 1670, show the Green Gate neighborhood as it described in the 1611 deed? Why has no before drawn attention to the fact that map (1670) did actually show the Green Gate which, records show, was not taken down until 1682-3?

A photocopy of the 1670 engraving been available on the shelves of our public libraries for more than fifty years, stating that it shows "the buildings as they were in that it shows" (the buildings as they were in Pilgrims' time". (History of Plymouth Plantation 1620-1647. William Bradford. 1958) It seems that someone recognized back then that the picture agreed with 1611 deed. There may have been reasons at the time for restricting comment to

casual and innocuous little aside. Indeed, the very context in which it occurs suggests possible reasons.

In answer to the reader of *The Pilgrims'* Leyden who asked if this map were a new discovery, I quote: "A discovery is never merely a lucky find; it requires awareness of the importance of the object found and

ALABAMA



Dep. Gov. Mrs. John Spencer, Bob Waldrop, chairman of Homewood Lib. Bd., Mrs. Baker Van den Berg of the Soc. Lib. Comm., and Mrs. Irvine C. Porter, Gov.

Pilgrim book shelves were established several years ago in four libraries of the state, with continual contributions being made to them through the Society Library Committee. On November 14, books were presented to the Homewood Library in memory of Mrs. James Arthur Smith, her son James Jr., and Darius Thomas, a former Governor of the Society.

3500 copies of the Mayflower Compact were distributed to schools before Thanksgiving.

ARKANSAS

Among the new members who were officially accepted at the Compact Day meeting was State Governor Winthrop Rockefeller.

CALIFORNIA

The Society is planning for special celebrations of its 60th anniversary this year, including the meeting of the General Board in San Francisco on 7 September, at the Sheraton Palace Hotel.

a culture receptive to a potential addition to its knowledge."

I would add that it requires all three of these elements at once and, in relation to this picture of the Green Gate, now appears to be the first time all three have existed simultaneously.

*Leo Duell in *Testaments of Time*, 1965.

STATE SOCIETY NEWS

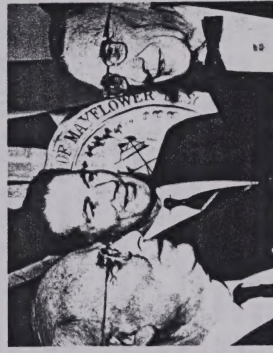
Los Angeles Colony Governor Dwight S. Cushman calls attention to the annual Pilgrim Festival held in Claremont, California by the retired workers home of the United Church of Christ. Held on November 10 and 11, the Festival featured a pageant of historic happenings in the lives of the Pilgrims.

The San Gabriel and Los Angeles Colonies met on November 4 in Pasadena where the subject of speaker Walter Knott was "Independence Hall and What it Means to Us."

COLORADO

The generosity of Denver's Presbyterian Hospital enabled the Society to place a copy of the story of the Five Grains of Corn at each place at their Compact Day dinner. For many years the hospital has given to each of their patients attractive sheets telling of the customs initiated by Gov. Bradford at the end of the first hard year at Plymouth.

CONNECTICUT



Left to right: Dep. Gov. Chester E. Halliway, speaker Herbert C. Darbee, and Gov. James R. Case at meeting of the Connecticut Mayflower Desc.

Copies of the Compact, Suggestions to Teachers and the Mayflower Song were sent to three Junior Members to be used in the American schools in Hanou, Germany. The members were Catherine A. Bruce W., and Andrew W. McDaniel, children of member Tracy (Foss) and Lt. Col. A. W. McDaniel, Commanding Officer at Fleigerhorst, Mrs.

McDaniel is the daughter of Mrs. Philip Emery Foss.

During the past year nine members have been presented with Emeritus membership. Each has been a member for 50 years or more, received Honorary Life Membership cards, and will pay no further dues.

The Mayflower Second, a film narrated by Robert Trout, was televised to 44 schools which have closed circuit TV, more than 30,000 copies of the Compact were distributed to schools, and an 8 by 12 copy of the document appeared in the Windsor paper as part of the Society's program for observance of Compact Day.

DELAWARE

The Society's Compact Day meeting had the largest attendance in several years, with 12 Junior members lunching at reduced rates. The movie reviewed in the February 1967 Mayflower Quarterly (page 4)—*The Mayflower Mouse*, now retitled *The Pilgrim Story* was purchased and shown at the meeting as well as over closed circuit TV to schools during November. (The film is available through McGraw Hill in New York, or from film rental libraries.)

DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA

The Society now has an official headquarters, the Neurich Mansion, home of the D. C. Historical Society and other groups, at 1207 New Hampshire Ave., N.W., Washington, D. C. 20036.

TV Station WTIG filmed an interview at the apartment of the Honorable Maurice Thatcher on the day before Thanksgiving. Mr. Thatcher and Society Governor Ordway were shown with a model of the Mayflower. The interview was broadcast twice on the holiday. After giving a stirring talk on the Pilgrims to the Civitan Club of Silver Spring, Md., Mr. Thatcher and Gov. Ordway were presented with the following citation: "Through you, as Mayflower descendants, we honor the Pilgrim Forefathers of 1620, whose deeds and acts have been instrumental in the establishment of civil and religious liberty throughout the land."

At a reception at the home of Senator Edward Kennedy, Col. Ordway discussed with the Massachusetts Senator the bill which could establish the Plymouth Rock National Historic Site to be administered by the National Park Service. The Senator gave Col. Ordway assurance that he would take action early in January.

A Voice of America evening broadcast interviewed Gov. Ordway and noted that our Thanksgiving festivities are patterned traditionally after the Pilgrims' festival. The

broadcast was made on the significant of December 21, the anniversary of Landing of the Forefathers at Plymouth in 1620.

Col. Ordway wore the Society's new purchased Governor's medalion at the Compact Day meeting when miniature medals were presented to Past Governors Nettie Thatcher, F. C. Whitney, Clark, Deni Nettleton, Jr., and retiring Governor J. Whitney.

Mrs. L. Welch Pogue was awarded a Society insignia for enrolling six blood relatives in the Junior Membership.

FLORIDA

The Elder William Brewster Colony proud of three members of over 50 years. Mrs. George E. Patterson, Malcolm R. Lovell, and Mrs. Hardgrove Norris, all whom joined the New York Society before 1917 and are now members of the Florida Society.

ILLINOIS



Left to right, Gov. Richard Flynn, Robert M. Bartlett, hostess Mrs. J. Omdorf.

The Compact Day banquet of the Society was held in Chicago's Sheraton Blackstone Hotel, where the pink and white decor of chrysanthemums and white tapers, a reception preceding the banquet, the refreshment table was highlighted with hard fruits and bayberry candles in old pew candle molds.

The famous ivory headed cane which been the property of Governor Braden was on display as usual. This was presented to the Society in 1927 by Frederick T. Haskell, whose family had cherished it many years.

Edward Fuller, Samuel Fuller, and their sister Susannah Fuller White were also among the Mayflower passengers. They were the children of Sir Nicholas Fuller of Steephay. Sir Nicholas Fuller was a barrister, admitted to Gray's Inn in 1563. He became Treasurer of the Inn in 1590, and in 1601 was a member of Parliament from St. Mawes. He lived at Warley Franks in a house still standing. In 1607 Nicholas Fuller was a prisoner in the Tower of London. He had published a pamphlet on behalf of two of his clients, charged with what was considered the very serious offense of relating the substance of a sermon they had heard. Nicholas Fuller was made to suffer for his defense of these men. In the letters of John Chamberlain which are in the Record Office in London, Fuller is mentioned many times. His son Edward was also a barrister, admitted to Gray's Inn 1606, who probably drafted the compact as he was the only man trained in the law. It is especially interesting to note that one of Edward Fuller's descendants was Melville Westcott, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of the United States. Edward's son, Samuel, married Jane Lathrop, daughter of Rev. John Lathrop of Christ's College, Cambridge. Lathrop was educated at Oxford University; was pastor of the First Congregational Church, London. Samuel Fuller was a physician. William Bradford said of Samuel Fuller: "The beloved physician of both the Pilgrims and Indians. He was one of the noblest on life," of which one indication is found in his deep friendship for Roger Williams, who was educated at Pembroke College, Cambridge. In Dr. Samuel Fuller's will provision was made for the education of his son Samuel, his daughter Mercy and his nephew Samuel and also for others "put to him for schooling" with special mention of Sarah Converse "left me by her sick father." One specific gift forms the nucleus of a fund that is still known as the Fuller Ministerial Fund of the Plymouth Congregational Church. Susannah Fuller, the sister of Edward and Dr. Samuel Fuller, was the wife of William White and mother of Peregrine White, the baby born on the Mayflower. After the death of William White, his widow, Susannah Fuller, became the wife of Governor Winslow. Later Josiah, the son of Governor Winslow, and his wife Susannah Fuller Winslow, became the first native born governor of the North American Commonwealth. It was in the year of their father's release from the Tower that Dr. Samuel Fuller and his sister Susannah Fuller left Steephay for Holland to join other Pilgrims who had been driven from England and exiled there. Their brother, Edward Fuller, a barrister, remained in England. In Holland, the exiles had to take to manual labor. Dr. Samuel Fuller became a weaver, but the physician was not the only student of the professional man to turn to manual labor in the furtherance of the cause. Susannah Fuller married William White in Holland. But Holland was not to be their permanent home. There were two immediate reasons why the Pilgrims left after a few years. First, they wanted their children to remain Englishmen and speak the English language; second, Holland was in danger of a war with Spain. It is not difficult, however, to understand that the flat, damp land of Holland would not be chosen as permanent home for people used to pleasant green rolling hills of the English countryside.

William White, the husband of Susannah Fuller, was the nephew of the famous Sir Thomas White, founder of St. John's, Oxford. One of his nephews was Ralph White, Master of St. John's,

whose three sons did much in founding the later Massachusetts Colony. William had two brothers, Alexander White, father of Mrs. John Carver (a Mayflower passenger), also father of Mrs. John Robinson. (John Robinson was ardent Puritan, was educated at Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, where he afterwards was a Fellow till 1603.) He became a curate of St. Andrew's, Norwich, and gathered round him many close friends, some of whom followed him to Holland.

William Brewster was a Cambridge man by education. He was assistant to Davison, Queen Elizabeth's Secretary of State. The attachment between the two men was very great. Davison, falling under the displeasure of Elizabeth on account of the death warrant of Mary Queen of Scots, was banished. Brewster having learned much by study and association with other Puritan leaders began to study the Bible. In New England when there was no minister he preached the sermons. He studied Hebrew when quite an old man as a help in the understanding of the Bible. His daughter Elizabeth married Samuel Fuller, son of Dr. Samuel Fuller.

Thomas Rogers was the grandson of John Rogers of Chigwell, who had been martyred because he had assisted Tyndale in the translation of the New Testament. The old Rogers' home still stands in Chelmsford. This home of the Rogers' family, in whose possession it had been for centuries, is not only connected with the martyr and his grandson, but also with John Harvard, who founded Harvard College at Cambridge, New England. John Harvard's mother was Katherine Rogers. The old Harvard home is in Stratford on Avon. Harvard College was founded in 1636, only 16 years after the first landing in Massachusetts. It was not founded as a religious college and was never a sectarian school, which shows a broadness of vision. Education and culture always had an important place in the lives of these people.

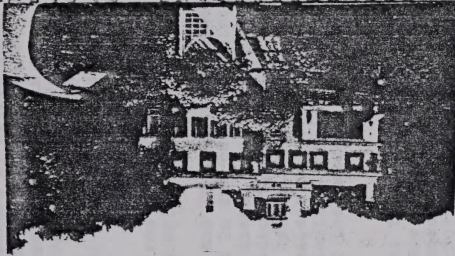
John Howland was a son of Henry Howland of Lancashire, England. From the record of Herold's College, London, is coat of arms confirmed to Richard Howland, son of John Howland. Miles Standish, a professional soldier of the English Army, came from Standish, the noble house of Standish, in Lancashire, mentioned in claims to land of vast estates.

Richard Warren was the grandson of Ralph Warren, who held very extensive estates in Essex, including Clabury and Barking; the honors of Leyton, Great Easton, etc. When Ralph Warren died, his widow married Sir Thomas White, Lord Mayor of London in 1557. Sir Thomas White had several nephews but no children of his own and he was very much attached to his stepchildren, Richard and Joan Warren, calling them in his will "my children". Richard Warren's name follows the name of William White on the Mayflower Compact. There were those family and business ties between the Cookes, Fullers, Rogers, Harrons and Whites of the Mayflower group. Warren is an ancestor of J. S. Grant and Franklin D. Roosevelt.

The passengers of the Mayflower signed the solemn compact binding themselves not only to make wise and just laws but to obey them themselves. This is the basic principle of our American Constitution. One can see today in Geneva this Mayflower Compact carved

A circular coat of arms featuring a central shield with a ship, surrounded by twelve smaller shields representing different families. The names of the families are written around the circle: Winstow, Fuller, Warren, and others.

For his brave defense of these men, Nicholas Fuller was made to suffer. In the letters of John Chamberlain, which are in the Record Office, he is mentioned several times. By December 7, 1607, Fuller is represented as having paid the fines imposed, but it is stated that: "There are submissions which he cannot digest." In January, 1608, like Barrowe, he was taken in a boat from the Tower to Lambeth to appear before the Archbishop. On being set at liberty, John Chamberlain says he was so "frollic", and so eager to see his wife and children again, that he could not wait to travel down the river.

[illegible]

as far as London Bridge to cross the river, that being the only bridge in those days, but actually crossed the river on foot by jumping the blocks of ice floating in the stream, although between sixty and seventy years old, and weakened by prison fare. But he did not enjoy his freedom long. He was again arrested, and this time when released it was to cross another river to a fuller liberty. He died at the age of seventy-seven. From NEW LIGHT ON THE PILGRIM STORY by Mason (Rev. Thomas) published in London 1920 by the Congregational Union of England and Wales.

The Story of Fuller's Case from "The Lion and the Throne" by Catherine Drinker Bowen

During these months, when Coke and Parliament together challenged Archbishop Bancroft, there ran in the courts a notorious suit, very pertinent to the point at issue. Fuller's Case, as it was called, after the barrister who defended it. Nicholas Fuller, a Parliament man (member for London) had been much employed by Puritans in their troubles with the ecclesiastical discipline. Voluble, active, Fuller was given to protesting subsidy bills in Parliament and saying unkind things about the Scots. "Nick Fuller" they called him in the Lower House.

The moment he had in tow no less than twenty Puritan clients, most of whom were trying to escape fines for nonconformity. Two of these -- Lad, a Norfolkman, and Mansell, a preacher -- had been imprisoned for contempt because at their trial before the High Commission they refused the oath ex officio. Fuller in defense of his clients insulted the bishops in open court. High commission procedure, said he, was "popish, under jurisdiction not of Christ but anti-Christ"; the oath ex officio led "to the damnation of their souls that take it"; he had heard said that bishops embroiled the fates of poor nonconformist preachers instead of paying them properly into Exchequer.

Fuller, upon this, found himself in custody for contempt ("Nicholas Fuller," it was said, "pleaded so boldly for the enlargement of his clients that he procured his own confinement.") The two clients were forgotten; to this day, no one knows what became of Lad and Mansell. But for nearly nineteen months, Fuller's case rocked back and forth between King's Bench and High Commission -- directed largely by Fuller himself from the White Tavern in Southwark, where Archbishop Bancroft had locked him in. King's Bench defended its prohibition on grounds that a barrister's conduct in court was a lay matter, to be tried at common law. Archbishop Bancroft declared otherwise. In the end, after two arraignments, Fuller was convicted, fined two hundred pounds and put in Fleet Prison. The charge was slander, schism, heresy, impious error, and the holding of pernicious opinions.

Putting Fuller in jail only heightened popular feeling and emphasized the point at issue: Was the High Commission a court of record, with power to imprison and to fine? Bancroft, Ellesmere and James said Yes: the common law said No. London visitors wrote home to their counties about Nicholas Fuller and his case, Parliament discussed it. The Lower House took Fuller's side. King Jan

showed agitation. By Elizabeth's Act of Supremacy (1559) James was monarch over Church as well as state; who impugned ecclesiastical authority impugned the sovereign. "I pray you," he wrote to Sir Robert Cecil, "forget not Fuller's matter. I prophesy unto you that whensoever the ecclesiastical dignity together with the King's government thereof shall be turned into contempt and vanish in this kingdom, the kings hereof shall not longer prosper in their government and the monarchy shall fall to ruin."

Dr. Cowell had been right; it was high time for an authoritative definition of the word "king". Lord Chancellor Ellesmere was ready to add a definition of his own. When the public conscience got out of order, the Lord Chancellor must set it in line by public rebuke delivered from Star Chamber or such official platform as was available. During Fuller's troubles a magnificent forum presented itself. Calvin's Case came to court in a blaze of fame and dignity. It was a test case to determine if a man born in Scotland after James's accession could call himself an English subject and inherit English lands -- in a sense, James' own suit, brought largely at his instigation. Parliament had defeated the royal plan of union with Scotland; James hoped to salvage at least the rights of citizenship for his onetime countrymen.

During the year following Fuller's imprisonment and Ellesmere's oration, prohibitions flowed out from Common Pleas under Coke's seal. Fuller's friends meanwhile distributed pamphlets, designed to get him out of jail, eloquent with Fuller's previous position, even borrowed certain of the phrases -- unless, indeed, Coke had inspired it in the first place. In an icy January of 1608, Fuller was freed.

The Thames froze solid that winter. Chamberlain's letter is dated January 8. Fuller apparently walked from Fleet Prison to the Surrey side where he lived.

The Records of Gray's Inn, one of the ancient Inns of Court, furnished author by the Librarian at Gray's Inn, contain the following information Re Nicholas Fuller:

Admitted to Gray's Inn	-----	1563
Autumn	-----	1574 June 17
Autumn Reader	-----	1587 May 26
Treasurer (Elected)	-----	1590 Nov. 19
Dean of the Chapel	-----	1601 Nov. 18
Sat in Pension from 1587 to 1619		
He was a Reader of Staple Inn.		
His Coat of Arms are in the South window of Gray's Inn Hall.		

As shown in the attached extract from the Records Nicholas Fuller died somewhere before May 26th 1620. He had 3 sons and 2 daughters, Edward, Samuel, Mary, wife of William Pinder, and Twins, Nicholas and Susannah, wife of William White.

REFERENCE: THE PENSION BOOK OF GRAY'S INN, VOLUME 1, PAGE 237.

1. "Whereas Mr. Nicholas Fullers chamber over the new gate is become void by his death and it is in the disposition of the house that it is ordered that if Sir Thomas Hughes Knight will leave the chambers which he now hath to the disposition of the house the he shall have Mr. Fullers late chamber."

1. He died in prison. Thomas Fuller, the historian, tells us that "Nicholas Fuller, a benchor of Gray's Inn, eminent in his profession, pleaded so boldly for the enlargement of his clients that he procured his own confinement. The case thus: Thomas Fuller, a merchant of Yarmouth in Norfolk, was imprisoned a long time by the High Commission and could not be failed, because (having formerly answered upon his oath twice, before the Chancellor of Norwich, to certain articles touching a conventicle) he refused to answer upon a new oath without sight of his former answers. Richard Mansell, a preacher, charged to be a partaker in a petition exhibited to the House of Commons in Parliament and refusing the oath ex officio to answer to certain articles, to him propounded, was long imprisoned by the Commissioners at Lambeth and could not be bailed. Both prisoners were brought to the bar on writ of habeas corpus, where Nicholas Fuller pleaded they ought to be discharged . . . Archbishop Bancroft got some legal advantage against Mr. Fuller in the managing thereof and then let him alone to improve the same. Fuller's friends complained that only by the colour of right and the rigour of might he was cast into prison . . . Many were his petitions to the King for his enlargement, whom the Archbishop had preacquainted with the case, representing him to the King as the Champion of Nonconformists; so that there he laid and died in prison. However, he left behind him the reputation of an honest man and a plentiful estate to his family. The imprisonment cannot have lasted long, since Fuller was at a Pension on November 10th 1619, and died sometime before May 26th in the following year. The goals of those days, however, were bad enough to be fatal in a few months."

REFERENCE: GRAY'S INN PENSION BOOK, VOLUME 1, PAGE 269.

"It is ordered by Pension that Mrs Pinder wyfe of Mr. Pinder sometime a fellow of this societie and daughter to Mr. Nicholas Fuller sometime a Reader of the same having heretofore obtained an order of Pension that her sonne Michael Pinder shall have a chamber allotted to him when he should be of this house the said Michael being now dead before he was admitted she now requesteth that her sonne Samuel Pinder being now the sonne of the said Mr. Pinder and grandchild of the said Reader might be admitted of this house without fine and that a convenient Chamber might by favour of this societie) be bestowed on him. Whereunto this Pension will ingly yielded and did admit him gratis and it is ordered that the Treasurer for the tym being shall allot unto him a convenient chamber in like manner as his brother Michael should have had (by former order) if he had lived." Nicholas issued an order of Pension that his Grandson Samuel Fuller, son of Edward, when he should be of this house shall have a convenient chamber.

Note: The Pension Books are the true record of all meetings of Pension covering the years 1569 to 1800.

EDWARD FULLER - Son of Nicholas Fuller (admitted to Gray's Inn) was a barrister, who lived in Stepney, one of the residential quarters of London. (See "New Light on Pilgrims story" by the Rev. Thomas W. Mason, London, Congregational Union of England and Wales, Inc., Memorial Hall, E.C. 4, Rayleigh, Essex.) The wife of Edward was Anne. They had two sons, Mathew and Samuel, born in England.

In the year of his father's release from the Tower, Samuel, together with his sister Susannah, wife of William White, and brother Edward, trained in the law as his father was, left Stepney for Holland. This departure was made at the same time as that of the Nottinghamshire group. There may have been connecting links. We note, for example, that William Brewster, of Scrooby, as Secretary to Davison had spent some time in London, and that the brothers Hamerton of Nottingham were afterwards in London.

In Holland, the exiles had to take to manual labour. Samuel Fuller became a weaver. Nor was the physician the only professional man to turn mechanic in furtherance of the great cause. During the twelve years that he lived there he was twice married; first to Agnes Carpenter, and afterwards to Bridget Lee, who survived him. He was deacon of the Leyden Church, where John Robinson was pastor.

This little family party embarked on the Mayflower at Plymouth, England. First comes the doctor, then sister Susannah or "Anna" as she was generally called, with her husband, William White, and a son; next brother Edward, his wife Ann, and their boy Samuel. Samuel's wife, Bridget, joined the Pilgrims some time after. We shall meet with Susannah again as wife of Governor Winslow; but for the present they are a family party of seven, with several other relatives. The old father had been dead some time, but perhaps there would be there Susannah's twin brother, Nicholas, the Shows, the Saffins, who were to follow later, and other good Stepney folk to wish them "good-bye".

In Plymouth, Massachusetts, just above the Plymouth Rock is a huge sarcophagus, in which have been placed the remains of those (41) Pilgrims, who died the first year. In this are the remains of Edward Fuller, his wife, Anne, and William White, husband of Susannah Fuller. The names are inscribed on the outside.

It would be well for all the people of America to learn the social status of the Pilgrim Fathers in England. It would lead to the highest admiration for the character and ideals of the Pilgrim heroes, and the strengthening of the bonds of all English speaking people. The voyage of the Pilgrims in 1620 will have increasing interest to historians in America, as it has in England, as America has become a dominating factor in international affairs.

The following English historians compiled this data and have valuable assistance in getting the facts together in England:

Dr. R. F. Scott, Master of St. John's College, Oxford,
Dr. P. Giles, Master of Emmanuel College, Cambridge,
Dr. W. T. Whitley, Drolinich,

Dr. S. C. Ratcliff, of Public Records, Office, London,
The Lord Bishop of Chelmsford,
Walter Bangess, B.A. Secretary of Unitarian Historical Society,
Thomas Mason "New Light on the Pilgrim Story".

"If as it has been often said, Cambridge was the home of Puritans it was at Chelmsford that the home was planned. Puritanism was fostered at Emmanuel College and St. John's College, Oxford. University men of Cambridge went to New England as a result of the Land's (a Cambridge man) persecution." "Cotton Mather said; 'If New England hath been in some respects Emmanuel's land, it is well, but this I am sure of,' Emmanuel College contributed more than a little to make it so."

The Pilgrims were well educated people. The leaders had been students in St. John's College, Oxford and in Cambridge University. It is always true the people who do things for a principle are the thinkers in advance of their time.

THE MAYFLOW COMPACT

IN THE NAME OF GOD, AMEN. We whose names are underwritten, the Pilgrims, do hereby certify that we are the true and lawful representatives of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland King, Defender of the Faith, etc.

Having undertaken, for the glory of God, and advancement of the Christian faith and honor of our King, Country a voyage to plant the first colony in the northern parts of Virginia, do by these presents solemnly and mutually in the presence of God, and one of another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil body politic, for our better ordering, preservation and furtherance of the ends aforesaid; and by virtue hereof to enact, constitute and frame such just and equal laws, ordinances, acts, constitutions and officers, from time to time, as shall be thought most meet and convenient for the general good of the Colony: unto which we promise all due submission and obedience.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF we have hereunder subscribed our names at Cape Cod the 11 of November, in the year of the reign of our said Lord, King James the sixth of England, the sixth of Scotland the sixty-fourth. A.D. 1620.

- | | |
|---------------------|------------------|
| JOHN CARTER, | JOHN TURNER, |
| WILLIAM BRADFORD, | FRANCIS EATON, |
| EDWARD WINSLOW, | JAMES CHILTON, |
| WILLIAM BREWSTER, | JOHN CLARKSON, |
| ISAAC ALLESTREE, | JOHN BLINGTON, |
| MILES STANDISH, | MOSES FLETCHER, |
| JOHN ALDEN, | JOHN GOODMAN, |
| SAMUEL FULLER, | DEBORAH PIERCE, |
| CHRISTOPHER MARTIN, | THOMAS WILLIAMS, |
| WILLIAM MOLLINE, | GILBERT WINSLOW, |
| WILLIAM WHITE, | EDMOND MARSHALL, |
| ROBART VALEN, | PETER BROWN, |
| JOHN HOWLAND, | RICHARD BENTLEY, |
| STEPHEN HORTON, | GEORGE SMITH, |
| EDWARD TILLY, | RICHARD CHASE, |
| JOHN TILLY, | ROBART GARDNER, |
| FRANCIS COOKE, | JOHN ALLEN, |
| THOMAS ROBERTS, | THOMAS DOTT, |
| EDWARD TINKER, | EDWARD DORR, |
| JOHN RUGAZE, | EDWARD LESTER, |
| EDWARD FULLER, | |



SUSANNA FULLER
WHITE
WAS NEW ENGLAND'S
FIRST WHITE MOTHER AND
ITS FIRST WHITE BRIDE
SHE WAS THE MOTHER OF
FIFTEEN WHITE CHILDREN
AND AS A WIDOW MARRIED
GOV. EDWARD WINSLOW ON
MAY 22, 1621
IN THE FIRST ENGLISH
MARRIAGE CEREMONY
PERFORMED IN THE NEW COL.

(Note: November 21st, of our Calendar is the same as November 11th, of the Old Style Calendar.)

* Has descendants now living.
† Descended from
† DIED FIRST WIDOW.

Twentieth Century Americans have become so accustomed to thinking of secondary education as universally free, a responsibility of the state, it is hard for them to realize that three centuries ago free schooling was an exception and not the rule. Yet, from the beginning of the English settlement on this continent there was concern for the children's education. This concern was true of Pilgrims and Puritans in New England, Quakers in Philadelphia, Anglicans in Virginia and the Carolinas and the Catholics in Maryland. The New Englanders succeeded best in creating schools in which children, poor and prosperous, could gain the essentials of an education.

Massachusetts and Connecticut had the advantage of a strong centralized government, and had firm opinions about training the young. The New England Colonies had another advantage no other colony had--such a high proportion of university men among its leaders. With in five years of its settlement one set about to in-

ing grammar school with a basic latin curriculum, like the grammar schools in England, and the next year raised money to hire Daniel Maude of Emmanuel College, Cambridge, to teach Harvard College. Founded 1636, just sixteen years after the landing of the Pilgrims 1620. Determination to duplicate the Education of England was responsible for their general interest in books and libraries. John Harvard bequeathed his library to Harvard College.

Women, a large portion of New England women were literate. Many were trained in the Dame Schools. Some of them received support from the towns, some were private. The Dutch of New York founded a school 1647 which has been continuous under the auspices of the Dutch Reformed Church. The public school in Philadelphia, in 1689, became the William Penn Charter School.

An Italian author, Stephen Graziop, was chosen by the leaders of the Plymouth Colony as an instructor in manners for men and ladies of gentle birth. Graziop's book "Civil Conversations", in Elizabethan translation, was prized by all the educated in England and America. A brief analysis of the laws of the Plymouth Colony

....., the laws nevertheless constitute one of the most valuable of contemporary sources for Plymouth's history, and they shed important and broadly diffused light upon social and economic, as well as on institutional, developments. The first laws reflect concern about basic problems common to all communities: handling the inheritance of property, marriage, crime, court proceedings, and so on. As time went on, and the colony grew in size, the laws reflected not only the maturing social organization but local problems and conditions, such as those involved in legislation about wages and control, licensing of innkeepers, the quality of experts, and provisions for the poor.

Among the notable advances of Plymouth law over that of contemporary England was the absence of writ to all children rather than to the adult, in order to the English rule of primogeniture. In the early days of settlement, the law was a development that have received but scant recognition, it may be possible to emphasize some of the permanent contributions of Plymouth

Turning from the general to the specific, and to the assessment of Plymouth's contribution to the American legal heritage, it may first be said that to Plymouth belongs the credit for having established what may fairly be described as the first American constitution. In 1606, at a meeting of the General Court in October, the laws of the colony were read, and some "found worthy the reforming"--there is more than a casual relation to Plymouth's lack of the recent statements throughout Greek literature that to obey the law is to be free.

Liberties was enacted in 1611. The other direction in which Plymouth made a distinctive contribution to the American legal heritage was the formulation of certain provisions of new substantive law: civil marriage, equality of descent among children, provision for widows, recording of deeds. All these were marked advances on English law.

Among the passengers of the *Mayflower* who landed at Plymouth in 1620, were two brothers, Edward and Dr. Samuel Fuller. Edward was accompanied by his wife, Ann, and his son, Samuel. During the winter which was a severe one for the Pilgrims, both Edward and his wife were among the number that died, and their son, Samuel, was left to the care of his uncle, Dr. Samuel.

Matthew Fuller, an elder son of Edward, came to Plymouth about 1640 with his wife and three children. He was a prominent man in the Colony; was captain in the militia, Surgeon-General of the Colony troops, and served as Chairman in the Council of War in 1671.

Samuel Fuller, son of Edward, resided at Plymouth and received three shares in the division of land in 1624. He was executor of his uncle's will in 1633. Soon after he removed to Scituate, where he built the fifteenth house of the place in 1635. He resided there until about 1641, when he became a resident of Barnstable, where he died 31 October, 1683, one of the last survivors of those who came in the *Mayflower*. He was a man of retiring habits, eminently pious and one whom posterity will ever honor.

Governor Bradford simply says that "Edward Fuller and his wife died soon after they came on shore." Edward died at Plymouth, between Jan. 11 and April 10, 1621 — and his wife died early in 1621. The name of the wife of Edward Fuller, was Ann.

SECOND GENERATION.

2. SAMUEL² FULLER, (*Edvard*'), b. about 1612, at some place in England not yet found, no record of his birth or baptism having been discovered; d. Oct. 31-Nov. 10, 1683, at Barnstable, Mass.; m. at Mr. Cudworth's house in Scituate by Capt. Miles Standish, magistrate, "on ye fourthe daye of ye weeke", April 8-18, 1635; Jane Lathrop, dau. of Rev. John Lathrop of Scituate and (after 1639) Barnstable, bapt. Sept. 29, 1614, at Edgerly, Co. of Kent, England; d. subsequent to 1658 and before 1683, but the exact date is not found.

Samuel Fuller grew up under the care of his uncle, Dr. Samuel Fuller, at Plymouth. He had three acres at the division of lands in 1623, receiving, it is thought, those of his father and mother, and one for himself. If this theory is correct he was at least sixteen.

Gov. Bradford's words about this matter are as follows: "All this while no supply was heard of, neither knew they when they might expecte any. So they begane to thinke how they might receive as much come as they could, and obtaine a beter croupe than they had done, that they might not still languish in miserie. At length, after much debate of things, the Gov^r (with ye advise of ye cheefest among them) gave way that they should set come every man for his owne peticuler, and in that regard trust to themselves; in all other things to goe on in ye general way (as a joint-stock company) as before. And so assigned to every family a parcell of land, according to the proportion of their number for that end, only for present use (but made no devission for inheritance), and ranged all boys and youth under some familie. This had very good success." Bradford's History of "Plymouth Plantation", ed. Mass. p. 162. The land assigned to him was on the South side of the town brook; "to the Woodward" and included what is now Watson's Hill. His neighbors were John Howland, Stephen Hopkins, Edward Winslow () Gilbert Winslow, and the Indian Hobomok.

On June 1, 1627 at a town-meeting, the inhabitants were divided into twelve groups for the purpose of dividing the cattle then owned in the Colony. "The eighth lot fell to Samuel Fuller (the Doctor) and his company; joined to him his wife Bridget Fuller, Samuel Fuller, Jr., Peter Browne, Martha Browne, Mary Browne, John Ford, Martha Ford, Anthony Annable, Jane Annable, Sarah Annable, Hannah Annable, Damians Hopkins. To this lot fell a red heifer, came of the cow which belongeth to the poor of the Colony, and is of that consideration, viz.: these persons nominated to have half the increase; the other half with the old stock, to remain for the use of the poor."

He is mentioned in his uncle's will in 1633 as follows: "It. my will is that my Cozen (nephew) Samuell goe freely away with his stock of Cattle and Swine without any further reconing web swine are the halfe of six sowes, six hogges, one boare & four shotes. Also one Cow & one heifer." "It. my will is that in case my sonne Samuell and other my children die before such time as they are fitt to enter upon my land for inheritance that then my kinsman Sam. fuller now in the howse with me enjoy wsoever lands I am now possessed of except my dwelling howse at town or whatsoever shall be due to me or them." "It. I give to him my Rufflet Clarke &

my stuffe sute I now weare." The date of this will is July 30, 1633 and within three months of that date the good doctor had been laid to rest. As the doctor's children survived, Samuel¹ received none of the lands, and soon, apparently, started out with the cattle and swine to seek a home. The whole transaction seems clearly to show that he had reached man's estate, being at least 21, and perhaps as much as 25 years of age at the time. He became a freeman of the Colony in 1634, and settled in the near by town of Scituate, where on April 8-18, 1635, as before stated, he married Jane, daughter of Rev. John Lathrop, the pastor of the Scituate church. Nov. 7, 1636 he joined the church of Scituate, having a letter of dismission from the church of Plymouth, of which he had been a member. He built in 1636 the fifteenth house in Scituate, on Greenfield Street, the first lot abutting on Kent Street. He had twenty acres of land on the east of Bellhouse Neck in that town, probably a grant of the town. The kind of house these early settlers built is worthy of note. Mr. Lathrop calls them "small plaine pallizadse Houses." The walls were made of poles filled between with stones and clay, the roof thatched, the chimney to the mantle of rough stone, and above of cob-work, the windows of oiled paper, and the floors of hand sawed planks. Mr. Lathrop who had been accustomed to life in Christ's College, Cambridge, and to a generous life in England, truly says that the dwellings in Scituate were "meane". Elsewhere he calls these structures *booths*, and says they were open and cold, and in winter a high piled fire had constantly to be kept burning. All the houses in the village were alike,—there was no opening for pride to claim supremacy. In June and July 1639 the Rev. Mr. Lathrop and many of the members of his church removed and founded the town of Barnstable, probably at the time the most easterly settlement on Cape Cod. If Samuel Fuller and his young family did not at once follow him thither, he did so in a few years. Otis, following the church records of Barnstable, thinks that he was there as early as 1641, basing his view on the fact that the Barnstable church record contains the baptism of his daughter Sarah on August 1, 1641, and of Mary on June 16, 1644. Otis says further that it does not appear that he was an inhabitant of the town till after January first, 1644. Now it is quite possible that the baptismal record is correct, and that Samuel Fuller did not settle in Barnstable until 1650. There being no pastor at Scituate, it is quite likely that

the two children were carried to Barnstable, or that the Rev. Mr. Lathrop visited Scituate, for their baptism. The record was little more than the minister's private diary, and all that it can certify to is the fact the children were baptised by him. The place might be anywhere he might be, if not within the parish of another settled pastor. The reasons for thinking that Samuel Fuller settled in Barnstable as late as 1650 are two.

In the second volume of Plymouth Colony deeds, folio 1. (See Mayflower Descendant, Vol. 1, April 1899, p. 91) is a deed which begins as follows: "To all Christian people to whom this p'sent writing shall com Samuel fuller of Scituate in the government of New Plymouth in New England in america sendeth greeting." He then proceeds to convey to "Peter Collymore of Scituate" "one dwelling house and a barne and Cowhouse with sixtene acars of upland more or less bounded on the west with the land of Mr William Varsall, on the south with the land of Resolved White, on the north with the hieway by the herring brook; and on the last with the marsh; as alsoe two pcells of marsh land containing twelve acars,——with all and severall the appurtenances therunto belonging or any way appertaining." This deed was signed and sealed March 25, 1650, the first day of the year according to the calendar then in use, equivalent to April 4, 1650, N. S. Samuel Fuller signed his name to this deed and there is appended the consent of his wife, as follows: "The 16th (26th N. S.) of May 1650 Jane fuller the wife of Samyel fuller did com before mee Timothy hatherley assistant to the Governor of New Plym: in New England and did freely acknowldg her willingness of the within Mentioned sale and did freely Resigne up her Right to Peeter Collymore.

Timothy Hatherley.

This is perhaps the only mention to be found of Samuel Fuller's wife Jane *after* her marriage. Mr. Hatherley was never a resident of Barnstable, and everything seems to show that the Fullers were still in Scituate at this date, May 16-26, 1650.

The other reason is that the first recorded birth of Samuel's children occurs on the Barnstable records, in the birth of the child Thomas on May 18, 1651. The earliest records of Scituate are lost.

Captain Matthew Fuller, Samuel's ^{brother} cousin, appears to have removed from Plymouth at about the same time, and together they bought of Secunke, an Indian, Scorton or Sandy Neck, that is, so much of it as lies within the town of Barnstable. The arable land in the purchase was set off to the Fullers, the remainder, including the meadows, was reserved as town commons, and afterword divided.

Samuel Fuller also bought meadow of his "cousin" Matthew that was Major John Freeman's and meadow of Samuel House, and land on Scorton Hill. He lived in the northwest angle of the town in a secluded spot, where few had occasion to pass. He had been a constable at Scituate in 1641, and his name appears a few times as jurymen, or committee to settle difficulties with the Indians. He was the only one of the passengers of the Mayflower who settled permanently at Barnstable, and one of the late survivors of that immortal company. He was buried, if not on his own estate, in the ancient burial place at Lothrop's Hill in Barnstable, near the site of the first Meeting House. No gravestone now exists.

The Will and Inventory of Samuel² Fuller (Edward).

Recorded in Plymouth Colony Wills and Inventories, Volume IV, Part II, pages 138 and 139. (Transcribed by George Ernest Bowman, and first published in the Mayflower Descendant, Vol. II. P. 237)

(p. 138) "The last Will and Testament of Samuel fuller of Barnstable Late Deceased Exhibited to the Court held at Plymouth fift of June 1684 on the oath of Capt: Joseph Laythorp and Mr Samuel Allin as followeth The nine and twentieth Day of October in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred eighty and three; I Samuel fuller senir of the Towne of Barnstable in the Govrment of New Plymouth being ancient (aged) and very weake in body but of good and Compliant memory thanks be unto almighty God; and Calling to remembrance the uncertaine state of this transitory life and that all flesh must yield unto Death when it shall please God to Call. Doe make ordaine and I Constitute & Declare this my last will and Testament in Maner and form following:

Revoking and Anulling by these presents all and every Testament and Testaments will and wills hereofore by mee made and declared either by word or writing; and this to be taken onely for my last will and Testament and none other; and first I give and Comitt my soule unto almighty God my Saviour in whom I trust and beleive assuredly to be saved; and my body to

the earth: from whence it was taken, to be buried in such Decent and Christian manor as to my executors hereafter Named shalbe thought meet and Convenient; and Now for the Settling of my temporall estate and such goods Cattles and Debts as it hath pleased god far above my Deserts to bestow upon mee; I Doe order Give and Dispose the same in Maner and forme following: That is to say first I will that all those Debts and Dutyes as I owe in right or Conscience to any manor of prson or prsons whatsoever shalbe well and truly Contended and payed or ordained to be payed within Convenient time after my Decease by my executors hereafter named:

Item I Give and bequeath unto my eldest son Samuell fuller two psells of Marsh one of them I bought of Mr Samuell house Deceased and the other I bought of Captaine Matthew fuller Deceased that he had of Mr John freeman;

Item I give and bequeath to my son John fuller four acres of Marsh and one halfe which I bought of Peter Blossome

Item I give and bequeath that psell of Marsh that lyes by Ralph Jones, his Marsh, To my two sones Samuell fuller and John fuller to be equally Divided betwixt and one psell of Marsh that lyeth on this side Scorton ffeildes to be Divided as abovesaid and the angle Lotts of Marsh att Scorton point to be equally Divided between them alsoe the Eelcreik Lott of Marsh to be alike Divided as above specified and the Lott of Marsh att Sandy neck upon the same account alsoe; and all my upland upon Scorton neck to be equally Divided betwixt them as the other above Mensioned.

Item I give to my son Samuell fuller all my upland that lyeth above my uppersmost field and to range quite Crosse my land upon one and the same lyne as the uppersmost fence as my upmost feild now ranges, but alwaies to allow Cart wayes to the Comons into the Comons for his brother John fuller his heires and assignes

Item I give and bequeath unto my son John fuller my now Dwellinghouse orchyard and all out housing and all the rest of my Upland wherever it dothe lye, but alwaies to allow a Cart way into the meddowes for his brother Samuell fuller his heres and assignes.

Item I Give and bequeath to my son John fuller one three year old horse runing in the woods;

Item I Give and bequeath to my son Samuell fuller two mares runing in the woods;

Item I Give to my Daughter Elizabeth Taylor five pound in Mony and two Cowes;

Item I Give unto my Daughter hannah Bonham four pounds in Money and two Cowes;

Item I Give unto my Daughter Mary Williams four pound in Money and two Cowes

Item I Give and bequeath unto my Daughter Sarah Crewe four pounds in Mony and two Cowes

DESCENDANTS OF EDWARD FULLER.

30

Item I Give and bequeath unto my four Daughters hannah Bonham Mary Williams Elizabeth Taylor and Sarah Crow all my household stuffe to be equally Divided betwixt them

Item I Give and bequeath to my son John fuller the Indian Jaell; my prte in the oxen the Cart and plow and the Cart and plow Geares and working tooles and one fatt Cow that is to kill and my bald faced horse; and my Great bible;

Item I Give and bequeath to my two sons Samuel fuller and John fuller all the rest of my Neat Cattle to be Divided To my son Samuel one third prte; and to my son John fuller the other two third prtes therof; and all my sheep to be equally Divided betwixt them;

Item I Give and bequeath to my son Samuel fyfyer ten pounds in money which hee now owes to me and hath now hath it already; and all the rest of my estate in what kind soever it be I Give and bequeath to my two sons Samuel fuller and John fuller; to be divided to my son Samuel fuller one third prte therof and to my son John fuller the other two third prtes therof, and by these presents make ordaine & Declare the above said Samuel and John fuller the executors of this my last Will and Testament; In Witness whereof I the said Samuel fuller have heerunto sett my hand and seal the Date above written;

Witnesse

Joseph Laythorp
Samuell Allin

Samuell fuller and a seal.

Captaine Joseph Laythorpe made oth as a witness to this will before the Court held att Plymouth the fift of March 1683-84.

Mr Samuel Allin Made oath as a witness to this Will above written this 10th of March 1683-84, before mee Barnabas Laythorpe Assistant.

(p. 139) A true Inventory of all and singular Goods Chatties and Credetts off) Samuel fuller senr, late of the Towne of Barnstable in the Govrment of New Plymouth in New England Deceased prayesd att his house in Barnstable aforesaid the 14 Day of November in the year of our Lord 1683 by Joseph Laythorpe and Jededia Jones as followeth:

Impti his apparel	08.08.00
Item in Cash	17 07 00
Item in 3 Guns anymition shoos	
Nailes & a peece of Lether	02 09 00
Item in Lynnin	03 10 00
Item in pewter and ten	02 05 00
Item in brasse	02 05 06
Item in tryes Cherm a tubb and a spoon and an old warming pan	00 17 06
Item Iron polts tonges slice frying pan and Candlesticke	01 19 00
Item a Cobbord old Chlsts a box & and bedsteed	03 15 00

Samuel^r had three acres at the division of lands in 1622, receiving, it is thought, those of his father and mother, and one for himself. If this theory is correct, he was at least sixteen years old at the time, and his birth occurred as early as 1608. It is not quite certain, however, that he was old enough to work his land alone. The land assigned to him was on the south side of the town brook, "to the Woodward," and included what is now Watson's Hill. His neighbors were John Howland, Stephen Hopkins, Edward Winslow, Gilbert Winslow and the Indian, Hobomok.

Samuel^r was mentioned in his uncle's will in 1633 as follows: ". . . my will that my Cozen (nephew) Samuel goe freely away with his stock of Cattle and Swine without any further reconing wch swine are the halfe of six sowes, six hogges, one boare & four shotes. Also one Cow & one heyfer . . . I give to him my Rufflet Cloake & my stuffe sute I now weare."

In 1636 he built his house in Scituate, on Greenfield the first lot, abutting Kent Street. He had twenty acres of land on the east of Bellhouse Neck, probably a grant from the town. The kind of house these early settlers built is worthy of note. Mr. Lothrop calls them "small plaine palizadise Houses." The walls were made of poles filled between with stones and clay, the roof thatched, the chimney to the mantel of rough stone, and the above of cob-work, the windows of oiled paper, and the floors of hand sawed planks. Mr. Lothrop who had been accustomed to life in Christ's College, Cambridge, and to a generous life in England, truly says that the dwellings in Scituate were "meane." Elsewhere he calls these structures "booths" and says they were open and cold; and in winter a high piled fire had constantly to be kept burning. All the houses in the village were alike.

Children of Samuel^r and Jane (Lathrop) Fuller. Born in Scituate.

3. I. Hannah³, b. -----; m. Jan. 1, 1658-9 Nicholas Bonham of Barnstable. Children: (1) Hannah⁴, b. Oct. 3, 1659. (2) Mary⁴, b. Oct. 4, 1661;

m. July 15, 1681, Rev. Edmund Dunham; her son Jonathan⁵, b. Aug. 16, 1604; d. March 10, 1777; m. Aug. 5, 1714, Jane Ryatt and had David⁶, b. 1723; d. Oct. 6, 1806; m. Rebekah Dunn. Their son Phineas⁷, b. Dec. 11, 1764; d. Feb. 10, 1844; m. Nov. 13, 1788, Zenuah Dunham, and had Maria⁸, b. April 28, 1800; d. Sept. 2, 1880; m. Aug. 9, 1821, Edward Augustus Reynolds. Their daughter Rebecca⁹, b. May 17, 1824; m. Nov. 3, 1842, Archibald Foster Steuart, and their daughter Margaret Foster Steuart, b. Aug. 16, 1845; m. Sept. 6, 1870, John Hamilton Derby. Mr. and Mrs. Derby reside at Sandy Hill, N. Y. Children:

- I. George Hamilton¹⁰, b. July 31, 1875; d. Oct. 18, 1875.
- II. Archibald Steuart¹¹, b. Nov. 5, 1876; m. June 14, 1900, Mary Franklin Wait, and has: Mary Hamilton¹², b. Sept. 1, 1901; Margaret Wait¹³, b. Aug. 8, 1906.
- III. Anna Louise¹⁴, b. July 29, 1879; m. Sept. 24, 1906, Andrew Bartlett O'Hara.

IV. John Hamilton¹⁵, b. Feb. 18, 1886. The other children of Archibald Foster Steuart are: Edward Reynolds¹⁶ Steuart, Sec. Colo. Society Mayflower Descendants; Mary Catherine¹⁷ Steuart; Mary Reynolds¹⁸ Steuart; Archibald Foster¹⁹ Steuart, Jr.; Anna Louisa²⁰ Steuart; George Ranyon²¹ Steuart; and Juliette²² Steuart. Benajah²³ Dunham, another son of Rev. Edward Dunham and Mary (Bonham) Dunham,* b. Aug. 13, 1884; m. Sept. 21, 1904, Dorothy Martin and had one son John²⁴, b. July 8, 1905, who m. Oct. 23, 1928, Mercy Drake. John and Mercy also had a son named John²⁵, b. Aug. 12, 1940, who m. Mary Gleason, b. 1943, and they had a son James²⁶, b. Aug. 9, 1968; d. Aug. 28, 1835; m. Ursula Dunn, b. 1767; d. Feb. 12, 1840. A dau. Abigail²⁷, b. to James and Ursula March 11, 1792, m. Duncan Ayres, and had a dau. Abigail²⁸, b. May 28, 1818 at New Brunswick, N. J.; d. at Bergen Point Oct. 6, 1891; m. there Nov. 1, 1856 Rufus Story, b. at Milan, N. Y.

*For a further account of the Dunham Family see "History of Dunham family in America" by Prof. Isaac Dunham of Hartford, Conn.

Feb. 6, 1813; d. at Bergen Point Oct. 6, 1887. Their dau. Alice²⁹ Story, b. at Bergen Point, Jan. 2, 1858; m. Oct. 19, 1881 David Hall Rowland, b. in New York City Aug. 30, 1854. They reside in Plainfield, N. J.

(3) Sarah³⁰ Bonham, b. Feb. 16, 1664 at Barnstable. Samuel³¹, bap. Feb. 11, 1637 at Scituate.

III. Elizabeth³², b. ———; m. Joseph (?) Taylor.

IV. Sarah³³, bap. Aug. 1, 1641 by Rev. John Lathrop; d. about 1651-54.

V. Mary³⁴, bap. June 16, 1644 by Rev. John Lathrop; m. Nov. 18, 1674, Joseph Williams, son of John Williams of Haverhill, Mass. Mrs. Mary Williams d. 1720 in neighborhood of Norwich, Conn., where they settled in 1694. Children: (1)

Sarah³⁵, b. Nov. 7, 1675. (2) Mary³⁶, b. Nov. 29, 1677. (3) John³⁷, b. Feb. 17, 1680, who settled in Pequannuck, then in Norwich, now in Preston, Conn.; d. 1741 and left descendants. (4) Hannah³⁸, b. Sept. 30, 1683.

Born in Barnstable.

VI. Thomas³⁹, b. May 18, 1651; d. young.

VII. Sarah⁴⁰, b. Dec. 10, 1654; m. ——— Crowe, (probably John Crowell, Senior, of Yarmouth, who d. in 1714). Children: (1) Jane⁴¹, who m. before Feb. 10, 1696-7, David O'Kella of Yarmouth. (2) Thomas⁴², (3) John⁴³, (4) Ephraim⁴⁴, (5) Sarah⁴⁵, (6) Jemima⁴⁶, (7) Thankful⁴⁷, (8) Hannah⁴⁸, b. April 1, 1677.

IX. John⁴⁹, b. about 1656.

Infant⁵⁰, b. Feb. 8, 1658; d. 15 days after.

THIRD GENERATION.

4. SAMUEL⁵¹ FULLER, (Samuel⁵², Edward⁵³), b. Feb. 1637-8; m. Anna⁵⁴ Fuller (Matthew⁵⁵). There is no record of his family on the Barnstable records, and but little is known of him. He probably lived on a portion of his father's estate. An inventory of his estate was taken at Barnstable, Dec. 28, 1691, amounting to £98. 17. 00. From this it appears that he had been some time deceased, and that his widow had recently died, for her estate was settled on the 30th of the same month. The names of his children, given below, are taken from an agreement made at that time, dated Dec. 30, 1691.

The Pilgrim Migration

Immigrants to Plymouth Colony 1620-1633

Robert Charles Anderson

Great Migration Study Project
New England Historic Genealogical Society
Boston 2004

hath by these presents taken the house and land that his father lived on and died in, in the town of Scituate, for his full and entire portion ... freely allowing that the profit and benefit of the said house and land shall redound unto his mother, Susanna Wheston, for the full term of six years from the date herefore, for and towards the bringing up of the other children of the said John Wheston." As for the residue of the lands, Joseph released them to the rest of his brothers and sisters, with first option to buy if they should choose to sell [PCR 4:75-76]. On 6 March 1665/6, the court reasoned that the land at Conihassett set aside for the benefit of the small children was not likely to do them much good in its present state, and empowered Joseph Whiston "with the help of his father-in-law William Brookes, and his uncle, Edward Jenkins," to sell the land on behalf of the children [PCR 4:114].

On 30 April 1672, the Suffolk County Court ordered that "the estate that is left of Joseph Whetstone shall be divided amongst the children, the eldest son to have a double portion & Edw[ar]d Jenkins to be discharged" [SCC 108]. This probably did not refer to the children of Joseph, but rather to his siblings.

BIRTH: By about 1616 (based on estimated date of marriage).

DEATH: By 4 October 1664 [PCR 4:75-76].

MARRIAGE: By about 1641 Susanna Hanford, daughter of Jeffrey and Eglin (Hatherly) (Downe) Hanford (and niece of TIMOTHY HATHERLY) [GM 2:3:205-7; PM 234; Stevens-Miller Anc 1:485-86]. She married (2) by 1665 William Brookes.

CHILDREN:

- i JOSEPH WHISTON, b. say 1641 (adult 1664); d. Boston by 31 October 1666 [PCR 4:139], unm.
- ii SARAH WHISTON, b. say 1643; m. Scituate 25 May 1663 Thomas Nichols.
- iii JOHN WHISTON, b. about 1648 ("aged eighteen years or thereabouts, being the next eldest brother to Joseph Whiston, late deceased at Boston," on 4 January 1666/[7]), chose "his uncle, Edward Jenkins, of Scituate," to be his guardian [PCR 4:139]; m. by 1678 Abigail Lombard, daughter of Joshua Lombard (eldest known child bp. Scituate 26 May 1678 [NEHGR 57:182]; in his will of 22 January 1689/90, Joshua Lombard bequeathed to "Abigail Whistone my grandchild" [MD 12:88, citing BarnPR 1:43]).
- iv SUSANNA WHISTON, b. say 1650; m. Scituate 2 May 1671 Thomas Perry [TAG 70:43-44].

- v INCREASE WHISTON, bp. Scituate 10 August 1656 [NEHGR 57:85]; no further record.
- vi BATHSHEBA WHISTON, bp. Scituate 1 July 1660 [NEHGR 57:86]; m. about 1682 Eleazer Dunham [TAG 30:154, 173, citing PCPR 4:2:21].

COMMENTS: On 7 March 1631/[2], "John Whetston" appears on the passenger list of *William & Francis*, the same ship on which TIMOTHY HATHERLY sailed for New England that year [Hotten 149].

On 7 December 1641, a warrant was issued for John Whetston of Scituate and others "to answer at the next General Court for goods they took, which were found by shipwreck" [PCR 2:29]. On 4 January 1641/2, "John Whetston confesseth that he had (of the goods taken up in the bottom of the bay about Satuckquet) a pair of drawers, a waistcoat & a shirt" [PCR 2:31].

WILLIAM WHITE

ORIGIN: Leiden, Holland (but see MF 13:2).

MIGRATION: 1620 on the *Mayflower*.

FIRST RESIDENCE: Plymouth.

ESTATE: In the 1623 Plymouth division of land William White received five acres as a passenger on the *Mayflower* (even though he had been dead for two years) [PCR 12:4]. In the 1627 Plymouth division of cattle Resolved White and Peregrine White were the tenth and eleventh persons in the third company [PCR 12:10].

BIRTH: By about 1590 (based on estimated date of marriage).

DEATH: Plymouth 21 February 1620/[1] [Prince 184].

MARRIAGE: About 1615 Susanna _____. She married (2) Plymouth 12 May 1621 EDWARD WINSLOW [Bradford 86].

CHILDREN:

- i RESOLVED WHITE, b. say 1615; m. (1) Scituate 8 April 1640 Judith Vassall [PCR 8:19], daughter of WILLIAM VASSALL {1630, Boston} [GMB 3:1871-75]; m. (2) Salem 5 October 1674 Abigail (_____) Lord, widow of WILLIAM LORD {1635, Salem}.
- ii PEREGRINE WHITE, b. 4 December 1620 ("Whilst some were employed in this discovery [of a good harbor], it

pleased God that Mistress White was brought abed of a son, which was called Peregrine" [Mount 31]; m. by 6 March 1648/9 Sarah Bassett, daughter of WILLIAM BASSETT [PCR 2:183; PM 48].

COMMENTS: In his list of those who came in the *Mayflower*, Bradford includes "Mr. William White and Susanna his wife and one son called Resolved, and one born a-shi-board called Peregrine, and two servants named William Holbeck and Edward Thompson" [Bradford 442]. In his accounting of 1651 Bradford tells us that "Mr. White and his two servants died soon after their landing. His wife married with Mr. Winslow, as is before noted. His two sons are married and Resolved hath five children, Peregrine two, all living. So their increase are seven" [Bradford 445].

Most *Mayflower* researchers argue that Susanna () (White) Winslow was not, as often claimed, sister of SAMUEL and EDWARD FULLER [MF 5:7, 13-2, 5:7; NEHGR 110:182-83; MD 53:67-69; PM 215, 217]. Jeremy Dupertuis Bangs has, however, recently dissented from this view, arguing that William White of the *Mayflower* did marry in Leiden a sister of the Fuller brothers [NEHGR 154:109-18].

On 30 October 1623, EDWARD WINSLOW wrote from London to "his much respected Uncle Mr. Robert Jackson" who was clerk of the sewers at Spalding, Lincolnshire. In his letter he wrote that "almost two years since I wrote to my father-in-law declaring the death of his son White & the continued health of his daughter and her two children; also how that by God's providence she was become my wife.... My wife hath had one child by me, but it pleased him that gave it to take it again unto himself; I left her with child at my departure (whom God preserve) but hope to be with her before her delivery" [NEHGR 1955:242-43]. This remains the best clue to the identity of the wife of William White.

BIBLIOGRAPHIC NOTE: In 1975 Robert M. and Ruth W. Sherman published an account of William White and his descendants as part of the first volume of the Five Generations Project of the General Society of *Mayflower* Descendants [MF 1:95-187]. Robert S. Wakefield revised and republished this material in 1997 [MF 13].

ROGER WILDER

Roger Wilder came to Plymouth in 1620 on the *Mayflower* as a servant to JOHN CARVER [PM 95], and died before Carver did (which was in the spring of 1620/1) "of the common infection" [Bradford 441, 443].

THOMAS WILLETT

ORIGIN: Leiden, Holland.

MIGRATION: 1630.

FIRST RESIDENCE: Penobscot.

REMOVES: Plymouth, Rehoboth, New York 1665, Swansea 1668.

OCCUPATION: Merchant, magistrate and soldier.

FREEMAN: Admitted freeman of Plymouth 1 January 1633/4 (and appended to the 1633 list of freemen) [PCR 1:4, 21]. In the list of 7 March 1636/7 [PCR 1:52]. In the Plymouth sections of the Plymouth Colony lists of 1639 and 1658 (first in list, as "Capt. Thomas Willett") [PCR 8:174, 197]. In the Swansea section of the Plymouth Colony list of 29 May 1670 [PCR 5:279].

EDUCATION: On 19 February 1660/1, "Capt. Willett" was one of five men "chosen by the town to transcribe the land records out of the town book" [Early Rehoboth 4:13, citing Rehoboth TR 1:136]. His inventory included more than a hundred books, on theology, history, law, navigation and other subjects [MD 33:35-37].

OFFICES: Plymouth Assistant, 5 June 1651, 3 June 1652, 7 June 1653, 6 June 1654, 8 June 1655, 3 June 1656, 3 June 1657, 1 June 1658, 7 June 1659, 6 June 1660, 4 June 1661, 3 June 1662, 1 June 1663, 8 June 1664 [PCR 2:166, 3:7, 30, 48, 77, 99, 114, 134, 162, 187, 214, 4:13, 36, 60].

Deputy for Plymouth to Plymouth Colony General Court, 7 July 1646 [PCR 2:104].

Plymouth selectman, 18 February 1649/[50] [PTR 1:30]. Committed to distribute the poor's cattle, 16 July 1638, 7 July 1642, 22 July 1644 [PTR 1:4, 8, 18]. Assessor, 17 December 1640, 26 November 1641 [PTR 1:6, 8]. Surveyor, 17 May 1649 [PTR 1:28]. Supplier of coats to pay Indians for killing wolves, 4 November 1650 [PTR 1:31]. Agent to ren land at Puncateesett to Captain Cooke, 26 September 1657 [PTR 1:35].

In Plymouth section of 1643 Plymouth Colony list of men able to bear arms [PCR 8:188]. On 7 March 1647/8, he succeeded Capt. Mile Standish as captain of the military company at Plymouth [PCR 2:121].

**The
Pilgrim Migration**

**Immigrants to Plymouth Colony
1620-1633**

Robert Charles Anderson

**Great Migration Study Project
New England Historic Genealogical Society
Boston 2004**

12/4/04 NEIGS #56.45

Polly Sampson Holmes, 1801. WILLIAM, son of 3d Lewis, m., 1845; Susan S., d. of Richard Bagnall, and had William L., 1848; Herbert; Iattie, 1853; Clara, 1857; and Mary L., m. Thomas P. Swift. WILLIAM, Duxbury, son of 3d Thomas, m., 1760, Ruby Candler, and had Ichabod; Ruby, m. Abner Dingley; Lucy, m. Jesse Simmons; Nathaniel. He m., 2d, Keshia Dingley, and had Sarah, m. Edmund D. Baker. ZACHARIAS, Duxbury, son of 3d Thomas, m., 1760, Hannah Curtis, and had Olive, m. E. D. Baker; Sylvanus, m., Bartlett Sampson; Elkanah. He m., 2d, 1798, wid. Lydia Churchill of Plymouth. ZACHARIAS, son of 2d Edmund, m., 1717, Meliabel Shaw, and had Jonathan, 1718; Zeruiah, 1720; James, 1723; Zechariah, 1728; and Meliabel.

WETHERED. This name is supposed by some to have been corrupted from Wetherell. JOHN, son of Samuel, m. Remember Bates, 1732, and had Rebecca, 1733; Mary, 1735; Rebecca, 1737; Remember, 1739; Mercy, 1742, m. Barnabas Holmes; Samuel, 1746; and John. JOHN, son of above, by wife Submit, had Mary, 1771, m. Clark Finney. SAMUEL, m. Abigail May, 1708, and had John, 1708; Rebecca, 1711, m. Silas West.

WHARTON, ROBERT, m. Mary Burn, 1779.

WHITBECK, GEORGE W., m. Betsey C. Woodward, 1839.

WHITE, BENJAMIN, Hanover, son of 1st Cornelius, m., 1743, Hannah Decrow, and had Penniah, 1744; Robert, 1747; Hannah, m. Daniel Crooker of Pembroke; Benjamin, 1754; Cornelius, 1755. BENJAMIN, Hanover, son of above, m., 1780, Mary Chamberlain of East Bridgewater, and had Lewis, Cyrus; Mary, m. Reuben Peterson of Duxbury; Sylvia, m. Ezekiel Stetson; Benjamin, 1701; Benjamin, 1705, m. Mary Hall. BENJAMIN, Marshfield, son of 1st Daniel, m., 1714, Faith Oakman, and had Abigail, 1715; Tabitha, 1717; Lydia, 1719; Jedidah, 1721; Benjamin, 1724; and Joshua. BENJAMIN, Marshfield, son of above, by wife Mercy, had Benjamin, 1749; Tobias, 1753; Gideon, 1758; Luther, 1758. BENJAMIN, Marshfield, son of 2d Benjamin, m. Mary Hall, and had George, 1832; Mary H., 1833; Lewis E., 1835; Benjamin F., 1837; Harriet S., 1841. CORNELIUS, Marshfield, son of 1st Daniel, m., 1706, Hannah Randall, and had Lemuel, 1708; Cornelius, 1708; Paul, 1711, m. Elizabeth Curtis; Joanna, 1713, m. Nathaniel Phillips; Daniel, 1716; Gideon, 1717; Benjamin, 1721. CORNELIUS, Marshfield, son of above, m. Sarah Hewitt of East Bridgewater, and had Charles, 1740; Alice, 1742; Sarah, 1744; Ruth, 1746; Lucy, 1748; Cornelius, 1750; Cornelius, 1752; Olive, 1764; Cornelius, 1756; Warner, 1758; Polly, 1760. CORNELIUS, Shelburne, Nova Scotia, son of 2d Gideon, m., 1824, Agnes Crowell, and had Katharine Johnston, 1825; Elizabeth, 1827; Cornelius, 1830; Agnes, 1831; Gideon, 1833; Joann Davis, 1836; Sarah Jane, 1838; Mary Brinley, 1842; Cornelius, 1846. CORNELIUS, Hanover, son of 1st Benjamin, m., 1787, Sarah L. Hill of Pembroke, and had Cornelius, 1788. He m., 2d, 1801, Rebecca Bates, and had Albert, 1802, m. Lydia Bates. CYRUS, Hanover, son of 2d Benjamin, m., 1806, Ruth S. Keen of Pembroke, and had Sylvia, m. Leonard Green of Sharon; Lydia; Mary, 1810; Cyrus, 1811; Lewis, m. Catherine Gardner of Duxbury and Ann Bell; Deborah; and Benjamin, 1816. DANIEL, Marshfield, son of 1st Peregrine, m., 1074, Hannah Hunt, and had John, 1075, m. Susanna Sherman; Joseph, 1078,

m. Elizabeth Dwelly, and removed to Connecticut; Thomas, 1680; Cornelius, 1682; Benjamin, 1684; Eleazer, 1686; Ebenezer, 1691. DANIEL, Marshfield, son of 1st Cornelius, m. Abigail, d. of Samuel Turner, and had Daniel, Abigail, Catherine, Lewis, Urania, Samuel, Lydia, Temperance. DANIEL, Marshfield, son of above, by wife Margaret, had Nancy, 1781; Samuel, 1788; George, 1791; Sarah, 1793; Daniel, 1795; Cornelius, 1797; Eliza, 1799. EBERNEZER, Marshfield, son of 1st Daniel, m., 1713, Hannah Doggett, and had Obdiaah, 1716; Rebecca, 1718; Hannah, 1721. ELEAZER, Marshfield, son of 1st Daniel, m. Mary Doggett, 1712, and had Nehemiah, 1714; Peregrine, 1715; Eleazer, 1717; Elkanah, 1719; Mary, 1721; Benaiah, 1724; Penelope, 1727; Thomas, 1729; Rebecca, 1731. GIDEON, son of 1st Cornelius, m. Joanna, d. of Thomas Howland, 1744, and had Cornelius, 1744; Elizabeth, m. Hamilton L. Earl of England, and had Elizabeth, wife of the late General Durnford of the English army; Hannah, 1747; Experience, 1755; Gideon, 1752; Polly; Thomas, 1758; Joanna, m. Pelham Winslow; Catherine, and Thomas. GIDEON, Plymouth and Shelburne, Nova Scotia, son of above, an officer in the English army, m., 1787, Deborah, d. of Miles Whitworth, and had Joanna, 1788, m. William Davis of Plymouth; Miles Whitworth, 1789; Deborah Foxcroft, 1791, m. Thomas Brattle Gannett of Cambridge; Nathaniel Whitworth, 1793; Gideon Consider, 1795; Cornelius, 1797; John Dean Whitworth, 1799, m. Maria Rowland of Shelburne, and lives in Philadelphia; Sarah Whitworth, 1801, m. Thomas Brattle Gannett; Thomas Howland, 1806. GIDEON CONSIDER, son of above, m., 1810, Rachel Crowell of Shelburne, and had Elizabeth Crowell; Cornelius; Agnes, 1822, m. John A. Gannett and Winslow Warren. Jesse, Marshfield, son of 1st John, m. Catherine Charlotte Wilhelmia Sybellina Warner, a native of Germany, and had Sybeline, 1744; William; Sybeline, 1748; Christiana, 1750, m. a Lewis, the grandfather of Daniel James Lewis, now living in Fairhaven. JOHN, Marshfield, son of 1st Daniel, m., 1700, Susanna, d. of Samuel Sherman, and had Hannah, 1702; John, 1704; Abijah, 1706; Sarah, 1710, m. Isaac Phillips; Rebecca, 1713; Sylvanus, 1718; Jesse, 1720. JOHN, Marshfield, son of above, m., 1720, Joanna Sprague, and had John, 1738; Susanna, m. Ezekiel Young; James; Hannah, Andrew, and Nathan. JOHN, m. Ruth Shepard, 1726. JOHN, m., 1806, Sally Novet. JOHN, m., 1807, Lydia King. JONATHAN, Middleboro', son of 1st Peregrine, had previously lived in Yarmouth. JOSEPH, Marshfield, son of 1st Daniel, m. Elizabeth Dwelly, and had Deborah, 1712; Ruth, 1715; Elizabeth, 1721. JOSEPH, Middleboro', son of 3d Benjamin, had William, 1744; Joel, Zadiel, Daniel, Polly, and Nabby. LEMUEL, Marshfield, prob. son of 1st Cornelius, m. Anna Little, and had Anna, 1739; Priscilla, 1740; Sylvanus, 1742; Abijah, 1745; Sarah, 1749; William, 1752; John, 1753; Susanna, 1756; Deborah, 1746; Abijah, 1747. LUTHER, Marshfield, son of 4th Benjamin, by wife Mary, had Benjamin, 1700; Thomas Foster, 1802. MILES WHITWORTH, Boston, son of 2d Gideon, m., 1812, Marcia, d. of John Davis of Boston, and had Ellen, m. Edward Baldwin; Thomas, and Miles Whitworth. PEREGRINE, son of 1st William, born in Provincetown harbor, 1620, m., 1648, Sarah, d. of William Bassett, and had Daniel; Jonathan, 1653; Sylvanus, Peregrine; Sarah, m. Thomas Young

Resolved & Persevere Write Info.

of Scituate; Mercy, m. William Sherman. PENSURNE, Weymouth, son of above, by wife Susanna, had Benni, 1686, and others. REUBEN, from Wareham, m., 1816, Beulah King. RESOLVED, Scituate, son of 1st William, came with his father in the Mayflower 1620, and m., 1640, Judith, d. of William Vassall of Scituate, and had William, 1642; John, 1644; Samuel, 1646; Resolved, 1647; Ann, 1649; Elizabeth, 1652; Josiah, 1654; Susanna, 1656. ROBERT, Hanover, son of 1st Benjamin, m., 1771, Mary Crooker, and had Penialah, 1773. He m., 2d, 1777, Ann House, and had David, 1779; Martin, Richmond, Charles, Elijah. THOMAS F., from Marshfield, m., 1824, Hannah Clark. THOMAS HOWLAND, Thelburne, son of 2d Gideon, m., 1831, Cornelia Ogden, and had Cornelia, 1832, and Nathaniel Whitworth, 1837. THOMAS, Marshfield, son of 4th Benjamin, by wife Hannah, had Mercy, 1778; Sarah, 1780; Gideon, 1783; Benjamin, 1785. WILLIAM, son probably of Bishop John White of England, came in the Mayflower 1620. He m. in Leyden, 1612, Anna, sister of Samuel Fuller, always called Susanna. He brought with him his wife and son Resolved, born 1615, and had Peregrine, born in Provincetown harbor after arrival. WILLIAM, New Bedford, son of Joshua, m. a Bryant of Middleboro', and had Charity, Cabel, and Joshua. He m., 2d, Hannah Stetson, d. of Theophilus Cushing of Pembroke, and had William, Cushing, Ann, and Lucinda. WILLIAM, from New Bedford, son of above, m., 1807, Fanny Gibbs, and had Arabella, m. Nathaniel Goodwin of Plymouth; Fanny, m. Hayden Coggeshall; Peregrine, and John. WILLIAM, Marshfield, son of Jesse, had Sybil, John, Anna, and perhaps others.

WHITEHOUSE, JOHN, from Newport, m., 1766, Thankful Holmes.

WHITING, WHITEX, or WHITOX, ABRAHAM WHITEX, Kingston, son of 2d Elisha, m. Sally Robbins, 1796, and had Abraham; Sally, m. Joseph Wright; Polly, m. Thaddeus Washburn of Kingston; and Charles. ABRAHAM WHITEX, son of above, m. Lucia H. Holmes, 1826, and had Francis L., m. wid. Augusta P. Cady; Horace C., m. Jane E., d. of William Stephens; and Orrin Brooks, m. Abby Cushing. AXOS WHITEX, son of 2d Elisha, m. Priscilla, d. of Barnabas Holmes, 1803, and had Samuel Marshal, Amos; Priscilla, m. Jason Murdock of Wareham; and Lucia Ann, m. a Stetson of Kingston. ASA WHITING, Salem, probably son of 2d Joseph, m. Anna Thistle, and had John T., and Asa Alden. ASA ALDEN, son of above, m. Mary Millet Nichols, and had George A., 1838, m. Sarah Elizabeth, d. of Francis J. Goddard of Plymouth; Annie, 1840, m. Charles O. Churchill of Plymouth; Lucy, 1842, m. William A. Tarbell; John, m. Mary Winsor of Duxbury; and Sarah, m. William A. Munroe. BENJAMIN WHITING, son of 2d Elisha, m. Martha Harlow, and had Benjamin, m. Susan L. Finney; Ellis, m. Hannah C. Nickerson; John, Josiah; Martha, m. Ephraim F. Churchill; and Nancy, m. Rufus Sampson. BENJAMIN WHITING, son of above, m. Susan L. Finney, 1827, and had Benjamin, m. Lucy Hammond; and Josiah, m. Lydia C. White of Weymouth. CHARLES WHITEX, son of 1st Abraham, m. Mary R. Holmes, 1827, and had Charles, m. Lydia N. Bradford, M. Anna Sears, and Charlotte A. Irving; Lewis Holmes, m. Emeline A., d. of Robert Hutchinson; Abraham, m. Ruth W. Sears; Rufus Robbins, m. wid. Pauline (Wheeler) Wellington; Elisha Cobb; and Edward W., m. Laura Diman. ELSHA

WHITOX, son of 3d James, m. Joanna, d. of John Dunham, 1728, and had Elisha, 1729; Joanna, 1731; Alphus, m. Ruth Grafton; Azariah, m. wid. Rebecca (Churchill) Holmes; and Mercy, m. Ebenezer Doten. ELSHA WHITOX, son of above, m. Betsey Holmes, and had Levi, m. Ruth Finney and Mary Barden; Joseph, m. Sarah Morton and Polly Morton; Nathan, m. Rebecca Doten; Ephraim, m. Elizabeth Bartlett; Benjamin, m. Martha Harlow; Josiah, moved to Ohio; Mary, m. Josiah Morton; and Josie, all of whom assumed the name of Whiting. He m., 2d, Mary (Harding) Howard, wid. of Jesse, and had Abraham, Melzar, and Amos, all of whom assumed the name of Whitten. ELSHA WHITING, son of 1st Joseph, m. Almira Holmes, and had Caroline Augusta, m. William F. Spear; Mary Ellen, m. Winslow S. Holmes; Abby Iowa, Elisha; Joseph B., m. Laura T., d. of John T. Hall; and Fanny, m. William H. Moore, living in the state of New York. EPHRAIM WHITING, son of 2d Elisha, m. Elizabeth, d. of Ephraim Bartlett, 1796, and had Ephraim, m. Patience Everson; and Benjamin, m. Phebe R. Flemmons. GEORGE WHITING, son of 1st Joseph, m. Betsey P. Holmes, and had Emma, m. William H. Clark; and Georgiana. HENRY WHITING, son of 1st Joseph, m. Grace, d. of Ellis Holmes, and had Henry, 1816, m. Nancy, d. of William Burgess; Winslow, 1820, m. Abby Holmes; Pelham, 1823, m. Sophia B. Straffin. JAMES WHITOX, the ancestor, was in Hingham 1647, where he m. in that year Mary, d. of John Beal, and had James, 1651; Matthew, 1653, m. Deborah, wid. of John Howard; John, 1655; David and Jonathan, twins, 1658; Enoch, 1659, m. Mary Lincoln; Thomas, 1662, m. Joanna Garnet; Mary, 1664, m. Isaac Wilder, and a 2d husband named Jordan. JAMES WHITOX, Hingham, son of above, by wife Abigail, had Hannah, 1678, m. John King; James, 1680, m. Mercy, d. of Matthew Whiton; John, 1681, Samuel, 1685, m. Margaret Williams and Elizabeth Williams; Joseph, 1687, m. Martha Tower; Judith, 1689, m. James White; Rebecca, 1691; Benjamin, 1693, m. Sarah Tower; Solomon, 1696. JAMES WHITOX, Hingham, son of above, m. Mercy, d. of Matthew Whiton, and had Mary, 1710; James, 1712, moved to Hartford; Matthew, 1714; Jael, 1718, m. Isaac Thayer; Nathan, 1721; Cornelia, 1723; and Elisha. JOHN, Plympton, son of 1st James, by wife Bethiah, had Azariah, 1711; Alice, 1718; Jedidah, 1714; Zachue, 1716; Alphus, 1718; Bethiah, 1720; John, 1722; Thomas, 1724. JOSEPH WHITING, son of 2d Elisha, m. Sarah Morton, 1789, and had Abigail, 1790, m. Rufus Gibbs; Joseph, 1792, m. Betsey, d. of Ichabod Morton; and Henry, 1794. He m., 2d, Polly Morton, and had Sarah, 1804, m. Joseph Phillips of Duxbury; Eleanor, 1806; James Harvey, 1808; Elisha, 1811; and George. JOSEPH WHITING, Bridgewater, son of 2d Solomon, m. Abigail, d. of Isaac Alden, 1778, and had probably Asa. LEVI WHITING, son of 2d Elisha, m. Ruth Finney, 1784, and had Levi, m. Deborah Morton. He m., 2d, Mary Barden, 1812. MELZAR WHITTEN, Kingston, son of 2d Elisha, m., 1805, Wealtha Delano and wid. Deborah Caswell, and had Melzar, m. Susan, d. of Benjamin Delano. NATHAN WHITING, son of 2d Elisha, m. Rebecca Doten, 1786, and had Nathan, 1797, m. Polly Finney; Elizabeth Doten, 1798, m. Seth Finney; Olive, 1800; Rebecca, 1803, m. Henry Morton; Adoniram, 1805, m. Lucy F. Ingalls and Sarah W. Manter; Stephen, 1807; Levi, 1808,

My Anne (Hofland)
was living 974.4

Samuel Fuller said his sister's name was Susanna but they called her Anne

WILLIAM WHITE, Eleventh Signer.

Denied the span of life, which brings maturity of experience, William White told little of himself, and yet some possibilities make him a man of inherited prominence.

The will of Bishop John White, dated 1621, "alludes to a son, not called by name, who had left his country and church."

This tells the story, and, though William White succumbed to the "first sickness" soon after his arrival in Plymouth with his wife, whither he had gone to make the home denied them in England, to enjoy the privileges of his own form of worship, he left behind him a record his descendants must appreciate.

The bond with the Leyden people, strengthened by the very natural belief that Roger White, the brother of Pastor Robinson's wife was a kinsman of the Pilgrim White, made his stay in Holland have some touch of family interest, a connecting link between himself and the past, which must do him honor.

HIS EARLY DEATH.

All the anticipations of hardship and privation were closed by his death, only the wrench of the start and sorrow at parting from his dear ones to record. Even the wife he had so tenderly loved, and with watchful care led to a willingness to leave all behind her, that was the habit of her life, took upon herself new duties and affections, with a broad future which would have been a temptation to any woman, even if in her hours of self-communion she realized that six short weeks between the grave and the altar were hardly enough of mourning for the one who had been the chosen companion of her young life.

The circumstances were peculiar, the colony needed family ties for its very existence, and to be the wife of Edward Winslow, brought with it honors not to be ignored.

"THE OLD BIBLE."

According to Leyden records, William White married Anna Fuller February 6, 1612. In the summer of 1895 I saw the old Bible with many records on the blank pages, spaces and margins, owned by Mr. S. W. Cowles, of Hartford, Conn. It was printed in London in 1588, part in 1586, and through devious ways has reached the hands of its present owner. This Bible claims to have been originally the property of William White, of the Mayflower, and by his bequest went to Elder Brewster. There is no pretense at asserting that all the entries were made as they occurred by the participants, but there seems strong cause to believe that they were placed there by persons who, if not themselves eye-witnesses, had the records from those who were, and the fact that subsequent owners continued the book as a family Bible gives strength to the supposition of its reliability as a matter of history.

"The 'old Bible' is authority for William White's second marriage to Susanna Tilley 'ye 3d of March, 1620.'"

To my mind this exactly accounts for the circumstantial evidence surrounding this family. Learned men have satisfied themselves that the after, jailing of Mrs. White Susanna was merely the use of the name of Anna Fuller White in full. My search,

which has been great, reverses this. For the first hundred years in New England Susanna was the baptismal name and Susan the diminutive or pet name, not used by itself until the middle of the eighteenth century.

So Anna, or Annah (as the old name was), in early times had nothing whatever to do with Susanna or Susannah.

In later years the change is found during the lifetime of one person, she not dropping the Susan, but the Anna.

By baptism, and even later, when signing papers for admission to the church, the name would be Susanna, or with the final "h." But in greater maturity, showing the change which is periodical in names, the same woman used Susan in signing her will, or as a beneficiary. Naturally, when dropping the Anna and making Susan for brevity and strength the real name, Anna, secured a definite position.

DISCUSSION.

This very name was brought up for discussion in regard to Rev. Thomas Hooker's wife by Rev. William S. Porter, connected with Yale College, the one who helped Savage with his dictionary, and died some forty years ago.

With William White and his wife on the Mayflower, came one son, Resolved White, who afterward married a daughter of William Vassell, a gentleman of family and fortune, one of the early settlers of Massachusetts. The fact that very little is said of this son in connection with his mother, and that he hardly occupies the place a mother would claim for her son, seems to corroborate the appearance of her being his stepmother.

The Pilgrim Mr. e was a wool carder, and most of the trades chosen show a bearing on the woolen industries, which proved such a component part of the commercial connection between Holland and England during Queen Elizabeth's reign. The cosmopolitan character of Amsterdam and Leyden made strong history. The French, with their attributes of art, poesy and all graceful accomplishments, combined with their unvarying industry and cheerfulness, assimilated well with the phlegmatic Dutch, and the Mayflower, in consequence, took out the elements of future greatness in all directions.

★ THE FIRST-BORN ENGLISHMAN.

Happily for Peregrine White, "so named in token of the pilgrimage then in process," he was the first-born English child in New England, a welcome addition to the family of William White—a fact he never forgot during his life, and which yielded him good return. Upon this accident of birth he based his claim for lands and privileges. When the patent for Plymouth Colony was surrendered to the "Body of Freemen," three tracts of land were reserved for the "Purchasers, or Old Comers."

In 1635, Prentice being Governor, this grant was recorded: "In reference unto the request of the King's Commissioners in the behalf of Lieutenant Peregrine White, desiring that the Court would accommodate him with a portion of land, in respect that he was the first of the English that was born in these parts, and in answer unto his

own petition preferred to this Court respecting the premises,

"The Court have granted unto him two hundred acres of land lying and being at the path that goes from Bridgewater to the bay adjoining the bay line."

Resolved had no showing, only the legal right of primogeniture, but matters were reversed without his selling his birthright.

PERSONAL APPEARANCE.

Given one claim, another came to Peregrine, of which he was fully conscious, his fine personal appearance. He was very modest, but he kept the evidence of it well under control, and, though he was "a youth unduly gay for his time and generation," his other attributes served him well in the estimate of the public.

True to the knowledge which comes with these gifts, Peregrine did all in his power to enhance them, and when he went to visit his mother at Marshfield, whom he dearly loved, "he wore a coat with buttons the size of a silver dollar," presenting himself to her ever-admiring eyes on a coal black horse, himself the objective point, a natural delight to a fond mother's eyes.

To her he was always the loving son, and the wild ways attributed to him did not tell against her estimate, when he was always dutiful and attentive.

His stepfather, Gov. Edward Winslow, was no drawback, and had he been asked his blessing on their nuptials, in view of the return to himself, would have signified his unqualified approval.

His unknown father he had never missed; he was only a name to him and had no claim upon his memory.

Peregrine White married a daughter of William Bassett, and if old age is a guarantee of a blessing, it accompanied this union.

"Saturday, August 9, 1755, died at Scituate, in the ninety-second year of her age, Mrs. Sarah Youngs, the virtuous widow of Mr. Thomas Youngs, the eldest daughter of that Peregrine White, of Marshfield, who was the first born English child in New England.

"And this his eldest Daughter was Born in Marshfield in Oct. 1603, enjoy'd her Senses and Health in good measure till towards her end, and left four sons surviving."

The warlike element was not wanting in this Pilgrim descendant. In 1636 he volunteered for the Pequot war, and in 1642 was made "ancient bearer," or ensign, of the trained band when the forces were raised to protect the colonies against the Indians of the Narragansett tribe, of which "Miantonomo" was chief. Standish being in command, even this brave warrior, with his proud bearing, could be kept within bounds.

He was in his element at the head of a band, a proper victim for concealed wells, could the Indians only have known, that in his whole line of march, even with death at the end of it, he would never abate one iota from the military tactics furnished by his manual of arms.

So with "head erect and eyes to the front," he pursued his onward march, sharing in any glory that came to the expedition.

The "pen which is mightier than the

He did not marry & settle as he did until 1620-1 & wife mtd 2d to Edward Winslow

sword" was his in his youth, and he used it in a forcible manner, but in his last days made his mark on his will.

Peregrine White "lived in great Health and Vigour to the 84th year of his age, when a fever carried him off on July 22, 1704."

True to the instincts of his surroundings, even at the advanced age of 77, he joined the church, and the Boston "News Letter" of the period completes his history. "Death of Peregrine White, Marshfield, July 22, 1704.

"Captain Peregrine White, of this town, Aged Eighty-three years and Eight months, died the 20th Instant.

"He was vigorous and of a comely Aspect to the last.

"Was the son of William White and Susanna, his wife; born on board of the Mayflower, Captain Jones Commander, in Cape Cod Harbor, November 1620, was the First Englishman born in New England. Altho' he was in the former part of his Life extravagant, yet was much reformed in his last years, and died hopefully."

The descendants of Peregrine White inherit his martial spirit, one of them Isaac

White, born in Brimfield, Mass., enlisted from North Adams, Mass., was wounded at the battle of Bennington and carried off the battlefield in a chair, which the "tradition in the family tells was brought over in the Mayflower, and is still owned by the descendants."

How the chair so opportunely reached the scene of action is a matter of no moment, the deed, the valor is worthy of the Pilgrim.

This article has been left as originally written, with the feeling that there are historical truths involved, but the following quoted from a letter which reached me recently from Mr. Thomas Bradford Drew, librarian of the Pilgrim Society, Plymouth, Mass., gives opportunity for discussion.

"I notice you are inclined to have faith in the genuineness of the entries in the 'Old Bible at Hartford.' I have never seen it, but have noticed the quotations from it in different works, and one or two dates appended to the entries have made me very suspicious of the whole.

"First, the birth of Peregrine White is there given thus: 'Sonne born to Susanna White, Dec. 19, 1620, yt six o'clock morning.' Now, according to Bradford and Winslow's Journal, that birth was between

the 27th and 30th of November old style, or the 7th and 10th of December new style.

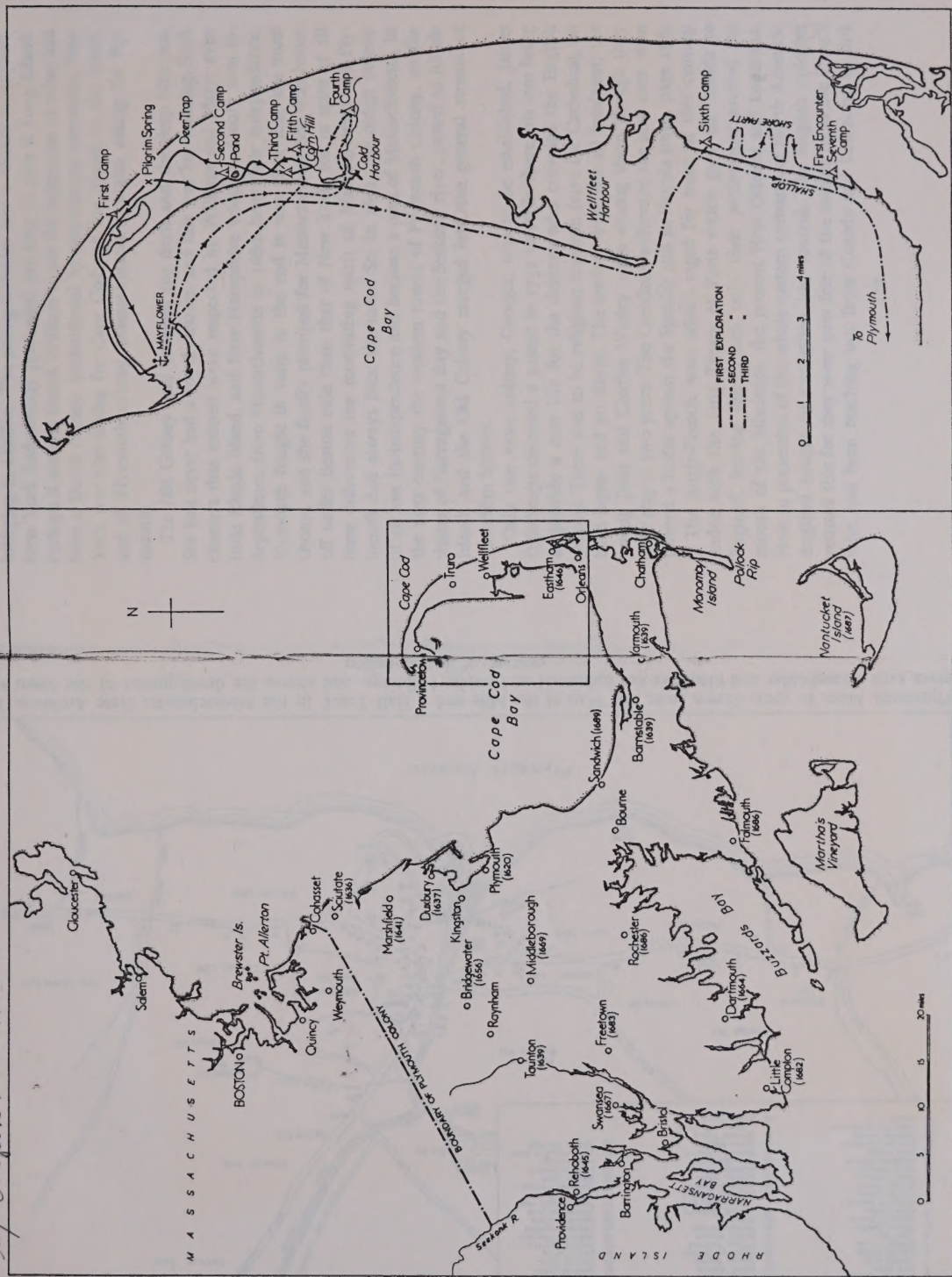
"Worse than that, however, is the record of the parents' marriage there given, which, as you quote, was on 'ye 3d of March 1620.' Now that makes (according to the old style of reckoning dates) the marriage of those parents three months after Peregrine was born, and some time after Mr. White had died, for it must be remembered that the year 1620 was not past until the 25th of March.

"Whoever wrote that, if they had wished to record an event which occurred in March previous to the child's birth, would have made it March, 1619.

"There is certain proof that the Pilgrim company did use the old style of dating, and by referring to the sixtieth page of Bradford's manuscript, or ninety-ninth of the printed copy, you will find the following: 'And being now come to ye 25th of March I shall begin ye yeare 1621.'"

For myself, while knowing myself to be in deep waters, at loss how to extricate the truth from the mass of material available, I cannot feel but that in justice to future writers on the Pilgrims, all I command should be placed at public disposal.

471.4
Mayflower Remembrance
Bay Cruise Bill 1970



Sketch-map of Plymouth Colony; the dates in parenthesis show when the various settlements were recognised as towns. Right, an enlargement of the Cape Cod area showing approximately the early wanderings of the Pilgrim explorers

The Old Colony

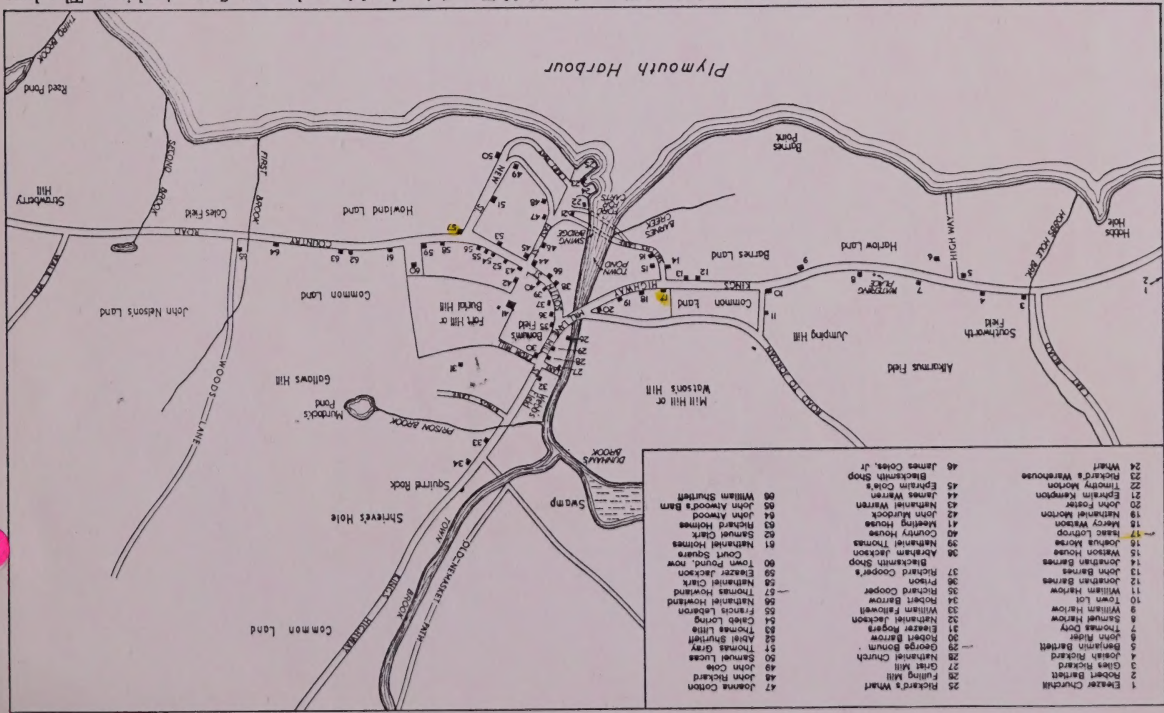
lobbying in London. The strong colonies saw a chance to expand. New York had already persuaded the king to give it Long Island. Perhaps it amused Dutch William to see the expansion of what had been a Dutch colony. Emboldened by this eastern extension, New York was also asking for Cape Cod and the islands to the south, and all Plymouth colony. Massachusetts was also asking for Plymouth.

The Old Colony was between the devil and the deep blue sea. She had never had a royal charter, and this was her undoing. Such charters that existed were respected by William and Mary; even little Rhode Island, and New Hampshire which had only won independence from Massachusetts in 1680, kept their independence. Plymouth fought in vain; in the end it was clear that she must choose, and she finally plumped for Massachusetts. She was better off under Boston rule than that of New York, for in spite of all their differences the motivating spirit of Massachusetts and Plymouth had always been the same. So, in 1691, the oldest colony of all lost its independence and became a part of Massachusetts. In the next century the western towns of Plymouth Colony, on the shores of Narragansett Bay and the Seekonk river, passed to Rhode Island, and the Old Colony merged into the general stream of American history.

Only one more colony, Georgia, was to be established. James Oglethorpe obtained a patent in 1732 to settle there, his aim being to provide a new life for the debtors who crowded the English prisons. There was to be religious freedom (save for Catholics), no hard liquor and no slaves. The settlers were not all insolvent; the young John and Charles Wesley were among them though they only stayed two years. The Carolinas welcomed the new men, who formed a buffer against the Spanish still in Florida (map, page 138).

The Anglo-French wars which raged for most of this century ended with the 1763 Treaty of Paris which gave all Canada to England, leaving the French only their settlements around the mouth of the Mississippi, the present New Orleans and Louisiana. Now in possession of the whole eastern seaboard of North America, England sought to strengthen her control. The English colonies resisted this for they were now free of the threats from the French who had been reaching out from Canada and Louisiana to link

Plymouth, Mass., in 1701, drawn from the 'Map of the Mile and a Half Tract' in the Massachusetts State Archives. The key gives each householder and identifies the industrial and public buildings, and shows the development of the town within a century of its foundation



Edward Winslow 1595-1655

7093

Zachariah Rhodes and widow of Nicholas Power [Austin 356, 364].

- vi JOSEPH WILLIAMS, b. Providence "about the beginning of the 10th month [December] 1643" [PrTR 1:7]; m. 17 December 1669 Lydia Olney [PrTR 5:329; RIVR 2:Providence:201].

ASSOCIATIONS: Brother of Robert Williams who came to New England by 1644 [TAG 28:199]. The wife of Roger Williams was sister of MUSACHIELL BERNARD {1635, Weymouth} [GM 2:1:261-63].

COMMENTS: For two of the daughters of Roger Williams, evidence was not found for the marriage to the first husband (Freeborn to Thomas Hart and Mercy to Resolved Waterman), although both unions are confidently asserted in any number of modern publications. The rarity of the name Freeborn speaks in favor of the marriage to Thomas Hart, but additional information would be welcome in both instances. Assuming these first marriages, the evidence is more than adequate in each case for the marriage to the second husband.

BIBLIOGRAPHIC NOTE: Given the many facets of the well-documented career of Roger Williams, and the many books and articles that have been written about his life, no attempt will be made here to cover all of his actions or all of the most important writings about him. In 1988 Glenn W. LaFantasie prepared a new edition of the correspondence of Roger Williams [*The Correspondence of Roger Williams*, two volumes (Providence 1988)]. The editorial material in this set includes an extensive bibliography, both of Williams's own writings and of later biographical material [lxxvi-lxxxviii]. One important item not included there is an article by Winifred Lovering Holman published in 1952 [TAG 28:197-209].

THOMAS WILLIAMS

Thomas Williams came to Plymouth in 1620 on the *Mayflower* and signed the Mayflower Compact. He died soon after arrival in the general sickness [Bradford 443, 447].

EDWARD WINSLOW

ORIGIN: Leiden, Holland.

MIGRATION: 1620 on the *Mayflower*.

FIRST RESIDENCE: Plymouth.

REMOVES: Marshfield by 1643.

RETURN TRIPS: Made many trips on personal and colony business. Returned to England in 1646 and never returned to New England.

OCCUPATION: Merchant.

FREEMAN: As governor, appears at head of 1633 list of Plymouth freemen [PCR 1:3]. In list of Plymouth Colony freemen of 7 March 1636/7 [PCR 1:52]. In Plymouth section of 1639 Plymouth Colony list of freemen [PCR 8:173], then erased and entered in Marshfield section of same list [PCR 8:177, 195].

EDUCATION: Attended the King's School of Worcester Cathedral from April 1606 until April 1611 [Edward Winslow 2]. Apprenticed to "John Beale, citizen and stationer, for the term of eight years," on 19 August 1613, but left his master in 1617 [Edward Winslow 3-4].

He had a hand in writing *Mourt's Relation* and also authored three other important pamphlets: *Good Newses from New England, or A Relation of Things Remarkable in That Plantation* (1624), *Hypocrisie Unmasked* (1646) and *New England's Salamander* (1647).

OFFICES: Plymouth Colony governor, 1 January 1632/3, 5 January 1635/6, 5 June 1644 [PCR 1:5, 36, 2:71]. Assistant, 1 January 1633/4, 1 January 1634/5, 3 January 1636/7, 6 March 1637/8, 2 March 1640/1, 1 March 1641/2, 7 March 1642/3, 4 June 1645, 1 June 1647, 7 June 1648, 4 June 1650 [PCR 1:21, 32, 48, 79, 2:8, 15, 33, 40, 52, 56, 83, 115, 123, 153].

In Marshfield section of 1643 Plymouth Colony list of men able to bear arms [PCR 8:196].

ESTATE: In the 1623 Plymouth division of land Edward Winslow was granted four acres as a passenger on the *Mayflower* [PCR 12:4]. In the 1627 Plymouth division of cattle Edward Winslow, Susanna Winslow Edward Winslow and John Winslow were the sixth through the ninth persons in the third company [PCR 12:10].

In the 25 March 1633 Plymouth tax list "Edward Wynslow Gov[ernor]," was assessed £2 5s., and the same amount in the list of 27 March 1634 [PCR 1:9, 27].

In his will, dated 18 December 1654 and proved 16 October 1655 "Edward Winslowe of London, Esquire, being now bound in a voyage to

sea in the service of the commonwealth," bequeathed to "Josia my only son" the entire estate "he allowing to my wife a full third part thereof for her life"; to "the poor of the Church of Plymouth in New England £10 and to the poor of Marshfield where the chiefest of my estate lies £10"; "my linen which I carry with me to sea to my daughter Elizabeth"; residue to "my son Josias, he giving to each of my brothers a suit of apparel"; "son Josias my executor"; "my four friends Dr. Edmond Wilson, Mr. John Arthur, Mr. James Shirley & Mr. Richard Floyd" overseers "for the rest of my personal estate in England" [MD 4:1-2; Waters 179, citing PCC 377 Aylett].

BIRTH: Baptized Droitwich, Worcestershire, 20 October 1595, son of Edward and Magdalen (Oliver) Winslow [NEHGR 4:297, 21:210; TAG 42:52].

DEATH: At sea near Hispaniola 8 May 1655 "aged 59 years, 6 months, and 18 days" [NEHGR 4:297]. *calculated 21 Oct 1595*
MARRIAGE: (1) Leiden, Holland, 12 May 1618 [NS] Elizabeth Barker [Plooj XXXV; Leiden Pilgrims 290; MD 22:66-67]. She died at Plymouth on 24 March 1620/1 [Prince 189].

(2) Plymouth 12 May 1621 Susannah () White, widow of WILLIAM WHITE ("The first marriage in this place, is of Mr. Edward Winslow to Mrs. Susanna White, widow of Mr. William White" [Prince 190]). (For the argument that Susannah's maiden surname was not Fuller, see the sketch of WILLIAM WHITE [PM 495]). She died between 1654 and 1675 [MF 5:6].

CHILDREN:

With second wife

- i Child WINSLOW, b. and d. 1622 or 1623 (in a letter dated 30 October 1623, Edward Winslow wrote that "[m]y wife hath had one child by me, but it pleased him that gave it to take it again unto himself; I left her with child at my departure ... but hope to be with her before her delivery" [NEHGR 109:243]).
- ii EDWARD WINSLOW, b. say 1624; living in 1627; no further record.
- iii JOHN WINSLOW, b. say 1626; living in 1627; no further record.
- iv JOSIAH WINSLOW, b. after 22 May 1627 (not in cattle division); m. by 1658 Penelope Pelham, daughter of Herbert Pelham (eldest known child b. Marshfield 13 March 1658 [MarVR 5]; in his will of 1 January 1672/3, Herbert Pelham

makes bequests to "my daughter Penelope Winslow" and "my son Josias Winslow" [NEHGR 33:291, 293; T:18:144].

- v ELIZABETH WINSLOW, b. say 1631; m. (1) by about 16 Robert Brooks [MD 1:238-40]; m. (2) Salem 22 Septem 1669 GEORGE CURWEN {1638, Salem} (called "lov sister Corwin" in brother Josiah's will [MD 1:238-40, 5:85; NEHGR 150:193]).

ASSOCIATIONS: Brother of GILBERT WINSLOW, JOHN WINSLOW, JOSIAH WINSLOW and KENELM WINSLOW.

COMMENTS: Bradford describes his fellow *Mayflower* passenger "Mr. Edward Winslow, Elizabeth his wife and two men-servants called George Soule and Elias Story; also a little girl was put to him, called Ellen, the sister of Richard More" [Bradford 441]. In 1651 Bradford reported that "Mr. Edward Winslow his wife died the first winter, and married with the widow of Mr. White, and hath two children living her marriageable, besides sundry that are dead" [Bradford 444].

Edward Winslow was a valued agent for Plymouth Colony, a evident from the pages of Bradford's history, and for Massachusetts Colony as well. Winslow left Plymouth for London in 1646 and not returned. He rose rapidly in the service of Cromwell's Commonwealth and was part of Cromwell's expedition to the West Indies when he arrived in 1655. All these aspects of Edward Winslow's life are portrayed in great detail in Jeremy Bangs's biography of the man.

BIBLIOGRAPHIC NOTE: In 1850 Lemuel Shattuck published "Genealogical Memoir of the Descendants of Edward Winslow, Governor of Plymouth Colony," which included in a footnote a list of birth and baptismal dates for Edward and his siblings [NEHGR 4:303]. Savage objected to this list of dates [Savage 4:598-99], but in 1909 William S. Appleton examined the original parish registers of Droitwich and in 1867 published the results of his research, which were in agreement with the 1850 article [NEHGR 21:209-11].

From 1965 through 1970 John G. Hunt published seven striking and intriguing articles on the Winslow family, examining the ancestry of five brothers, both on the paternal and maternal sides [TAG 41:168-71, 42:52-55, 186-87, 43:239-41; NEHGR 121:25-29, 122:175-78, 124:83].

The standard genealogy of the Winslows, now considerably outdated, was published in 1887 and 1888 by David P. and Frances K. H.

[*The Winslow Memorial*, 2 volumes (New York 1877, 1888)]. The bulk of these two volumes is devoted to the descendants of Kenelm Winslow, who had far more posterity in the male line than his four brothers combined.

Edward Winslow has been treated by Ruth C. McGuyre and Robert S. Wakefield in the fifth volume of the Five Generations series of the General Society of Mayflower Descendants [MF 5:3-27].

In 2004 Jeremy Dupertuis Bangs published *Pilgrim Edward Winslow: New England's First International Diplomat, A Documentary Biography* [Boston 2004], replete with complete transcriptions of many of Winslow's writings. Nearly half of this volume covers the last decade of Winslow's life, after he left Plymouth.

GILBERT WINSLOW

ORIGIN: Droitwich, Worcestershire.

MIGRATION: 1620 on the *Mayflower*.

FIRST RESIDENCE: Plymouth.

RETURN TRIPS: Returned to England by 1627.

ESTATE: In the 1623 Plymouth division of lands "Gilbard Winslow" received one acre as a passenger on the *Mayflower* [PCR 12:4]. His name does not appear in the 1627 Plymouth division of cattle.

The inventory of the estate of his brother KENELM WINSLOW included "one-half of the portion of land granted by the Court to him [Kenelm Winslow] and his brother Josias Winslow upon the account of their brother Gilbert Winslow as he was a first comer" [MD 24:42, citing PCR 3:1:56].

On 1 June 1663, Plymouth Court acknowledged "Gilbert Winslow, deceased, who was one of the first comers, to have a right of land, and do allow his heirs to look out and propose to the Court some parcel of land that the Court may think meet to accommodate them in" [PCR 4:40].

BIRTH: Baptized Droitwich, Worcestershire, 29 October 1600, son of Edward and Magdalen (Oliver) Winslow [NEHGR 4:297, 21:120].

DEATH: In England by 1650 [Bradford 447].

MARRIAGE: None recorded.

CHILDREN: None recorded.

ASSOCIATIONS: Brother of EDWARD WINSLOW, KENELM WINSLOW, JOHN WINSLOW and JOSIAH WINSLOW.

COMMENTS: In his list of those on the *Mayflower*, Bradford included Gilbert Winslow, and reported of him in 1651 that "after diverse years here, [he] returned into England and died there" [Bradford 443, 447].

Writing in 1994 about *Mayflower* passengers who returned to England, Doris Jones-Baker was unable to find anything about Gilbert Winslow in English records [*Genealogists' Magazine* 24:490-91].

JOHN WINSLOW

ORIGIN: Droitwich, Worcestershire.

MIGRATION: 1621 on the *Fortune*.

FIRST RESIDENCE: Plymouth.

REMOVES: Boston 1655.

OCCUPATION: Merchant.

FREEMAN: In the 1633 Plymouth list of freemen "John Winslow appears early in the list, ahead of those admitted on 1 January 1632 [PCR 1:3]. In list of Plymouth Colony freemen of 7 March 1636/7 [PCR 1:52]. In Plymouth section of 1639 Plymouth Colony list of freemen [PCR 8:173].

EDUCATION: Presumably educated as well as his siblings, and certain well enough to be successful in trade.

OFFICES: Deputy for Plymouth to Plymouth General Court, 3 June 1652, 7 March 1653/4, 6 June 1654, 1 August 1654 [PCR 3:8, 44, 263]. Council of War, 6 April 1653 [PCR 3:26].

In Plymouth section of 1643 Plymouth Colony list of men able to bear arms [PCR 8:187].

ESTATE: In the 1623 Plymouth land division John Winslow received one acre as a passenger on the *Fortune* [PCR 12:5]. In the 1639 Plymouth division of cattle John Winslow and Mary Winslow were fifth and sixth persons in the sixth company [PCR 12:11].

In the Plymouth tax list of 25 March 1633 "John Winslow" was assessed 18s. and in the list of 27 March 1634 the same amount [PCR 1:9, 27].

In his will, dated 12 March 1673/4 and proved 21 May 1674, "John Winslow Senior of Boston ... merchant" bequeathed to "my dear and well beloved wife Mary Winslow the use of my now dwelling house with the gardens and yards thereunto belonging for and during the term of my natural life," along with "all my household goods" and £400; to "my son John Winslow" the house and land after wife's decease, he paying £

apiece to "William Payne the son of my daughter Sarah Meddlecott and also to Parnell Winslow daughter to my son Isack Winslow"; "my ketch *Speedwell* ... and the net produce thereof [to] be equally divided amongst my children my son John only excepted"; to "my son Benjamin" £100 at age twenty-one; "if my son Edward Winslow shall see cause to relinquish his said part and interest in the said ketch *Speedwell* and her proceeds, then my will is that he shall have one-quarter part of my ketch *John's Adventure* unto his own proper use, and then the said ketch and cargo to be equally divided among my other children my son John excepted as aforesaid together with my son Edward"; to "my grandchild Susanna Latham the sum of thirty pounds in money to be paid her at the day of her marriage and to the rest of my daughter Latham's children ... five pounds" apiece when they come of age or marry; to "my son Edward Winslow's children" £5 apiece when they come of age or marry; to "my son Edward Grey his children that he had by my daughter Mary Grey" £20 apiece when the come of age or marry; to "my son Joseph Winslow's two children" £5 apiece as aforesaid; to "my grandchild Mercy Harris her two children" £5 apiece as aforesaid; to "my kinsman Josiah Winslow now governor of New Plimoth" £20; to "my brother Josiah Winslow" £20; to "my kinswoman Eleanor Baker the daughter of my brother Kenelm Winslow" £5; residue to be divided after wife's decease "among my seven children in equal proportions"; to "Mr. Paddy's widow five pounds as a token of my love"; "my negro girl Jane (after she hath served twenty years from the date hereof) shall be free"; "my son John Winslow" to be sole executor; "my loving friends Mr. Thomas Brattle, Mr. William Tailor and Mr. John Winsley" to be overseers, they to have £5 apiece [MD 3:129-33, citing SPR Case #688].

The inventory of the estate of John Winslow, taken 27 October 1674, totalled £2946 14s. 10d., of which £450 was real estate: "the dwelling house, garden & land adjoining to it," valued at £450; most of the value was in shares in vessels, hard currency, debts due and trade goods [MD 3:133-34, citing SPR 5:211-12].

In her will, dated 31 July 1676 and proved 11 July 1679, "Mary Winslow of Boston in New England" bequeathed to "my son John Winslow my great square table"; to "my daughter Sarah Middlecott" moveables "and to each of her children a silver cup with a handle"; to "my grandchild William Paine my great silver tankard"; to "my daughter Susanna Latham" moveables; to "my grandchild Ann Gray" moveables and £10; "my executor shall pay four pounds in money per annum for three years unto Mrs. Tappin ... towards the maintenance of the said Ann Gray"; to "Mary Winslow daughter of my son Edward Winslow my

largest silver cup with two handles and unto Sarah daughter of the said Edward my lesser silver cup with two handles, also I give unto my said son Edward's children six silver spoons to be divided between them"; to "my grandchild Parnell Winslow" £5; to "my grandchild Chilton Latham" £5; "the rest of my spoons be divided amongst my grandchildren according to the discretion of my daughter Middlecott"; to "my grandchild Mercy Harris my white rug"; to "my grandchild Mary Pollard forty shillings"; to "my grandchild Susanna Latham my petticoat with silk lace"; to "Mary Winslow daughter of my son Joseph Winslow" £20; residue to be equally divided among "my children John Winslow, Edward Winslow, Joseph Winslow, Samuel Winslow, Susanna Latham and Sarah Middlecott"; "my trusty friend Mr. William Tailor of Boston aforesaid merchant" to be sole executor; to "Mr. Thomas Thacher pastor of the third church in Boston" £5 [MD 1:65-69, citing SPR 6:300-1].

The inventory of the estate of "Mrs. Mary Winslow," taken 29 July 1679, totalled £212 11s. 9d., of which £67 was real estate: "one-half of the house which was formerly Mr. Joseph Winslow's" valued at £67 [MD 1:69-71, citing SPR 12:314-15].

BIRTH: Born Droitwich, Worcestershire, 16 April 1597 and baptized there 18 April 1597, son of Edward and Magdalen (Oliver) Winslow [NEHGR 4:297, 21:120].

DEATH: Between 12 March 1673/4 (date of will) and 21 May 1674 (probate of will).

MARRIAGE: Plymouth by 22 May 1627 Mary Chilton, daughter of JAMES CHILTON [PCR 12:11; MF 15:5-7; PM 103]. She died between 31 July 1676 (date of will) and 1 May 1679 (renunciation of executorship).

CHILDREN:

- i JOHN WINSLOW, b. say 1628; m. (1) by 1664 Elizabeth (eldest known child b. Boston 18 April 1664 [BVR 94]); m. (2) by an unknown date Judith _____ (in his will of 3 October 1683, John Winslow bequeathed to "my beloved wife Judith Winslow" [MD 10:54, citing SPR 6:435]).
- ii SUSANNA WINSLOW, b. say 1630; m. by 1650 Robert Latham (eldest known child b. Plymouth 2 June 1650 [PCR 8:11]).
- iii MARY WINSLOW, b. say 1632; m. Plymouth 16 January 1650/1 Edward Gray [PCR 8:11].
- iv EDWARD WINSLOW, b. about 1635 (d. 19 November 1682 "in the 48th year of his age" [MD 12:129]); m. (1) by 1661

Sarah Hilton, daughter of William and Sarah (Greenleaf) Hilton (eldest known child b. Boston 18 June 1661 [BVR 80]); m. (2) 8 February 1668 Elizabeth Hutchinson, daughter of Edward and Catherine (Hamby) Hutchinson [MD 12:129; NEHGR 145:261].

- v SARAH WINSLOW, b. about 1638 (d. 9 April 1726 "age 88" [NEHGR 15:308]); m. (1) Boston 19 July 1660 Miles Standish [BVR 76], son of MILES STANDISH [PM 451]; m. (2) by 1668 Tobias Payne (only known child b. Boston 21 January 1668[9] [BVR 108]); m. (3) by 1674 Richard Middlecott (eldest known child b. Boston 1 July 1674 [BVR 133]) [MD 12:1-10].

- vi SAMUEL WINSLOW, b. about 1641 (d. 14 October 1680 "aged 39 years" [Copp's Hill W 50]); m. by 1675 Hannah Briggs, daughter of Walter Briggs (on 22 June 1675, "Walter Briggs of Sittuate ... yeoman" and "Samuell Winslow of Boston merchant" drafted an agreement covering "part of his the said Samuell Winslow's wife[s] portion" [SLR 9:212-13]).

- vii ISAAC WINSLOW, b. say 1643; m. Charlestown 14 August 1666 Mary Nowell [Chvr 1:24], daughter of INCREASE NOWELL {1630, Charlestown} [GMB 2:1342-46].

- viii JOSEPH WINSLOW, b. say 1645; m. by 1668 Sarah Lawrence, daughter of Thomas Lawrence of Newtown, Long Island [TAG 17:76].

- ix Child WINSLOW, b. by 1651 [Bradford 446]; no further record.

- x BENJAMIN WINSLOW, b. Plymouth 12 August 1653 [PCR 8:15; PVR 660]; d. between 12 March 1673/4 (date of father's will) and 31 July 1676 (date of mother's will); unm.
ASSOCIATIONS: Brother of EDWARD WINSLOW, KENELM WINSLOW, GILBERT WINSLOW and JOSIAH WINSLOW.

COMMENTS: The varied abilities of this group of five siblings are interesting to observe. Gilbert left too slight a mark on the records to judge. Edward, the eldest, was also the ablest. The second brother, John, was also quite talented, but was not inclined to public service; he died as one of the wealthiest merchants in Boston in the mid-1650s. The two younger siblings, Kenelm and Josiah, remained in Plymouth Colony, were publicly visible so long as their two elder brothers were still present, and then faded slowly from sight.

BIBLIOGRAPHIC NOTE: John Winslow and his family are treated in the fifteenth volume of the Five Generations series of the General Society of Mayflower Descendants, in the section on JAMES CHILTON [MF 15:5-7, 10-19].

JOSIAH WINSLOW

ORIGIN: Droitwich, Worcestershire.

MIGRATION: 1631.

FIRST RESIDENCE: Plymouth.

REMOVES: Marshfield by 1643.

OCCUPATION: Bookkeeper [Stratton 375].

FREEMAN: Admitted 1 January 1633/4 (and appended to list of 1633) [PCR 1:4, 5]. In list of Plymouth Colony freemen of 7 March 1636/7 [PCR 1:52]. In Plymouth section of 1639 Plymouth Colony list of freemen [PCR 8:173], then erased and entered in Marshfield section of same list [PCR 8:177, 195]. In Marshfield sections of 1658 and 29 May 1670 lists of Plymouth Colony freemen [PCR 5:277, 8:201].

EDUCATION: The inventory of his estate included "1 Great Bible & psalm book" valued at 8s., "1 book of Ursinus on Christian Religion" valued at 9s., "2 books of Mr. Burrowghes" valued at 6s., "1 book of Mr. Weemes" valued at 2s. 6d., "1 book called Bloody Tenett" valued at 2s. and "26 old books" valued at 6s. [PCPR 3:1:135].

OFFICES: Deputy for Marshfield to Plymouth General Court, 6 June 1643, 10 October 1643, 5 March 1643/4, 3 March 1645/6, 1 June 1647, 5 June 1651 [PCR 2:57, 63, 68, 95, 117, 168]. Council of War, 5 June 1671 [PCR 5:64, 73].

Marshfield selectman, 3 June 1674 [PCR 5:144].

In Marshfield section of 1643 Plymouth Colony list of men able to bear arms [PCR 8:196]. His inventory included "1 fowling piece" valued at 16s., "1 old matchlock musket" valued at 6s. and "2 swords, one rest and bandoliers" valued at 16s. [PCPR 3:1:135].

ESTATE: Granted one hundred acres at Teticutt, 4 March 1673/4 (pursuant to an order of June 1662) [PCR 5:141].

In his will, dated 12 April 1673 and proved 4 March 1674/5, "Josiah Winslow of the town of Marshfield Senior" appointed "Margaret my dear and loving wife my sole executrix" and bequeathed to her for life "one half of my dwelling house ... and one half of the orchard and outhousing and also the one half of the land thereunto belonging, both

meadow and upland, ... in the town of Marshfield ... and the one half of all the lands belonging to me, by any grant granted to me formerly or to be granted"; "for the other part of my lands, house and housing I do give unto my natural son Jonathan Winslow ... with that half given to my wife after her decease ... but in case the said Jonathan shall die without heirs ... the whole and every part of the said lands and housing shall be disposed of [after the decease of Jonathan's wife] unto my four daughters and their heirs"; to "Hannah Miller my grandchild now living with me, if she continue with her grandmother during her life, or day of the said Hannah her marriage," moveables; "for my Indian apprentice I leave him and his time to my wife"; to "my grandchildren" ten shillings apiece; to "my faithful and truly loving friend Mr. Samuel Arnold our Reverend teacher my black cloak"; to "my son Jonathan my best suit and what bedding he now makes use of and the Bible that is mine"; "my loving nephew Major Josiah Winslow and Captain William Bradford" to be overseers [MD 34:33-34, citing PCPR 3:1:131-32].

The inventory of the estate of "Mr. Josiah Winslow deceased," taken 17 December 1674, totalled £107 16s. [illegible]; the real estate, not valued, was "one dwelling house and one hundred acres of upland without housing thereon and a considerable parcel or parcels of meadow belonging thereunto the quantity unknown to us" in Marshfield, also "1 hundred acres of upland lying in the town of Middleberry or Bridgewater near Teticutt River" [MD 34:34-35, citing PCPR 3:1:135, 136, 138].

On 1 March 1674/5, "[w]hereas the last will and testament of Mr. Josiah Winslow, Senior, deceased, the 12th day of the 2cond month, 1673, was presented unto the Court to be proved: Before probate of which caution was presented, grounded on sundry testimonies upon oath, whereby it did appear unto this Court that Mr. Josias Winslow, Senior, aforesaid, his house, and all his lands lying and being in Marshfield, were given by him the said Josias Winslow unto his son and heir, Jonathan Winslow, in frank marriage unto Ruth, the daughter of Mr. Will[i]am Serjeant, which said house and lands in Marshfield are again devised by his last will and testament unto his son, Jonathan Winslow, in tail; the Court apprehending that a man cannot by his last will and testament defeat and make void a gift of lands made unto his son and heir in frank marriage, but that such gift is extinct, and made void by a former gift in frank marriage, and therefore do declare that part of the will, so far as the disposal of the said house and land, to be a void gift, and do order that the abovesaid testimonies upon oath to be herewith recorded, and the rest of the said will abovesaid to stand valid, and do grant letters of administration unto Mistress Margaret Winslow, executrix to the said

will, and do request the honored Governor to take her oath to the inventory of the estate" [PCR 5:159-60].

BIRTH: Born Droitwich, Worcestershire, 11 February 1605/6 and baptized there 16 February 1605/6, son of Edward and Magdalen (Oliver) Winslow [NEHGR 4:297, 21:210].

DEATH: Buried Marshfield 1 December 1674 in his sixty-ninth year [MarVR 9].

MARRIAGE: By 1637 Margaret Bourne, daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth () Bourne [Waterman Gen 1:615-16, 619]. She died 28 September 1683, aged seventy-five years [PChR 1:250], and was buried at Marshfield on 2 October 1683 [MarVR 14].

CHILDREN:

- i ELIZABETH WINSLOW, b. Marshfield 24 September 1637 [MarVR 2]; apparently killed accidentally by her brother Jonathan in late 1646 [WJ 2:368; Edward Winslow 235].
- ii JONATHAN WINSLOW, b. Marshfield 8 August 1639 [MarVR 2]; m. by 1664 Ruth Sargent (eldest known child b. Marshfield 1 March 1664 [MarVR 7]; Josiah Winslow gave his Marshfield land "unto his son and heir, Jonathan Winslow, in frank marriage unto Ruth, the daughter of Mr. Will[i]am Serjeant" [PCR 5:159]).
- iii MARGARET WINSLOW, b. Marshfield 15 (or 16) July 1640 [MarVR 2; NEHGR 51:33]; m. Marshfield 24 December 1659 John Miller [NEHGR 51:33-34].
- iv REBECCA WINSLOW, b. Marshfield 15 July 1643 [MarVR 2]; m. by 1665 John Thatcher (eldest known child b. Yarmouth 20 May 1665 [MD 13:221]). (Savage gives the date of this marriage as 6 November 1661, at Marshfield, but this event does not appear in the Marshfield records.)
- v HANNAH WINSLOW, b. Marshfield 30 November 1644 [MarVR 2]; m. (1) Plymouth 5 April 1664 William Crow [MD 17:185]; m. (2) by 1687 John Sturtevant (eldest known child b. Plymouth 10 April 1687 [MD 1:145, 17:185]).
- vi MARY WINSLOW, b. say 1646; m. Marshfield 10 June 1670 John Tracy [MarVR 427].

ASSOCIATIONS: Brother of EDWARD WINSLOW, JOHN WINSLOW, GILBERT WINSLOW and KENELM WINSLOW.

EDWARD WINSLOW, Third Signer.

Edward Winslow, the third Governor of Plymouth Colony, was born at Droitwich, in Worcestershire, the ancestral home of the Winslows, son of Edward and Magdalen Olyver Winslow, and grandson of the first Kenelm. His birth is thus rendered in old St. Peter's Church at Droitwich: "1595, Edward, son of Edward Winslow, born the previous Friday, which was the 19th."

This old church is fast losing its identity, the ravages of time and the changes incident to progression have left only enough to admit of the continuance of the sentiment attached to it.

The registers, however, have been valued and carefully preserved. The texts of the church illuminate the walls, bidding "peace on earth and good will to man," and on the arch in this edifice, where the Pilgrim Winslows were held at the baptismal font, and were wont to worship, are the creed, commandments and Lord's prayer.

History's connections are passing strange. To reach Droitwich from London, one must pass through Worcester, the place where, in "battle array," Charles I. marched his forces against the very Cromwell who in after years was the warm and appreciative friend of Edward Winslow, Governor of Plymouth Colony. The booming cannons which told those at Droitwich of war and carnage were, to be sure, a thing of the past in that section; only a change of place and participants, however, when Winslow was to the front.

Edward Winslow, the diplomat of the Plymouth Colony, went to Leyden simply as a traveler seeing the world; a man of leisure, education and wealth—one who had behind him the ancestry of many generations, which had placed their impress on character and manner, commanding for him, what he was always credited with being, "of higher social position than the rest."

To confine him in a narrow sphere would be to lose the best of the man. Small methods were not matters of his knowledge. He required contact with people and affairs for his development, and a wise Providence guided his steps toward Leyden, where he was received, not as a refugee from religious persecution, but as a strong man, of moral character, whose subtle conception of the high integrity of word and deed required to keep the little community at Leyden together, made him from his arrival to his death such an important factor for the good of the whole.

The debt, however, was not all on the Pilgrim's side. Edward Winslow, in other situations, might only have been the good comrade and welcome guest. The serious part of his nature found its maturity under the influences surrounding him, and Edward Winslow, the man of the world, with the simple faith of a child, accepted the religion of his fathers as the motive power of his future life.

Many attribute his conversion to Pastor Robinson, but one glance at Weir's picture of the "Embarkation," where as the bride Elizabeth Winslow is portrayed, gives the thought that perhaps her weak woman's hand may have led him with loving care to

"choose that better part that cannot be taken away."

Edward Winslow's first wife was Elizabeth Barker, of Leyden, born in Chetsum, England, to whom he was married according to Leyden's records, by Pastor Robinson, May 18, 1618, Isaac Allerton for Winslow, his wife for the bride acting as witnesses. The first thought of colonization in far-off America, where the field was large enough to satisfy his desires, was in Winslow's mind. His instincts as a traveler were roused, and the preparations were developing his hitherto dormant powers for the diplomatic life so truly in the future a part of the man's very being. For him there was no struggle, his whole make-up was in favor of the start. Elizabeth, his wife, strong in her love, shared his anticipations. The home her husband described as to be their's the other side of the great ocean she looked forward to with eagerness, seeing everything with his eyes.

The dreaded ship life, with its close quarters and many discomforts, was safely over. Bleak New England was not responsive to her expectations; but she was strong in her love and determination to bear her part in the arranging which needed a woman's hand to secure to the husband of her choice even a semblance to the home which was part of her life.

THE FIRST SICKNESS.

But all this was of no avail. The accustomed privations on their long voyage, the desolation of the situation, with so little prospect of its betterment, and the keen winds of the Cape Cod coast, made sad ravages among them. Poor Elizabeth Barker Winslow, weary with the struggle, was "gathered to her fathers" March 21, 1621. Even the comfort of a grave bearing her name, which should tell her young husband and others that she had once been with them, was denied her. The Indians were keeping watch; the little colony was surrounded by fears worse than death. So the graves were leveled and planted, that the Indians might not know of their depleted numbers and attack them unawares and secure victory from the situation.

Let us hope that the English daisy Winthrop is said to have brought out with him may have sought that unknown grave and marked it with its beauty and piety.

Edward Winslow, called in history "the head of the emigration as Myles Standish was the right hand," was only twenty-six when he arrived at Plymouth, young, ambitious, with strong ideals for his future life, one of the gentry in the land of his birth and who, from the start shared with Bradford the main burdens of the government, owning a position to which the world yields ready homage, second in wealth in the colonies, a fact never registered against a man, found himself, notwithstanding these material benefits, alone in the world. Why should he thus remain, when a remedy was close at hand?

Elizabeth, so recently his companion, was "sleeping the sleep that knows no waking." A fellow-sufferer needed comfort, who so fitting to give it as himself?

His mind being fully made up, he sought advice of Bradford, and the surprise he

evinced in no way affected his action. Wise Winslow made an appearance of consultation at least, prepared with arguments only on one side, however. All wavering was a thing of the past, so May 12, 1621, "was ye first marriage in this place, which according to ye laudable custom of ye low countries, in which they had lived, was thought most requisite to be performed by the magistrate, as being a civil thing upon which many questions about inheritances doe depend," and Edward Winslow welcomed to his home, perhaps heart, Susannah Tilley White.

She hardly had time to realize the tie which bound her to William White before it was a thing of the past. "Only a dream at the best."

No one could doubt the benefits accruing to her from this second marriage. Susannah Tilley Winslow held the first place in everything, the first mother, the first bride, and then her son, Josiah Winslow, was the first native born Governor of Plymouth Colony. A husband, who had precedence always, what mattered the claims of his birthright, when the rank which was of the soul was his, and for which in honesty of purpose, he knew he must give much in return, having received much?

He made his professions, and lived up to them.

WHAT HE WANTED.

His reasons for coming to America showed him to be a loyal Englishman at heart. "He wanted the protection and language of his own country, the benefits of an equal education for his children, and to secure them in another country the right to live without being surrounded by the profanation of the Sabbath they saw on all sides in Holland."

The records tell us that Winslow was associated with Brewster in Leyden as a printer, and another statement is to the effect that "Winslow, Bradford and Winthrop, blessed be their names, and their descendants, were journalists."

At all events, Edward Winslow started on his diplomatic career early in his Pilgrim life. When it was necessary to visit and confer with Massasoit, the Indian chief, to sound his intentions, and, so far as possible, make some plan of action in regard to their intercourse, this delicate mission, carrying the olive branch, with due care to convey sense of power, was intrusted June, 1621, to Edward Winslow and Stephen Hopkins.

With that tact which never deserted him, Winslow secured a friend in the Indian chief, accomplished his mission, "and with the tribe they held friendly intercourse and 'eat oysters.'"

"He was a man of great activity and resolution, hence qualified to conduct enterprises." This treaty with Massasoit, "the work of only one day, being honestly intended on both sides, was kept with fidelity as long as Massasoit lived," but was afterward broken in 1675 by Philip, his successor.

Considering the courtesy and justice of both men, it is highly probable that the account of this interview and treaty was written by Edward Winslow. The precedence always given Stephen Hopkins estab-

lishes it, as they were the only persons engaged in the mission.

Squanto, the ever faithful, was their guide and interpreter.

The arrival of the Ann in 1623, followed closely by the Little James, the last of the "forefathers' ships," brought them personal and physical comfort. Still, the growing needs of the colonies and their inadequate supplies forced the conviction on them that the strongest and best fitted of their number, to cope with English experience and so place affairs before the Adventurers and Merchants, as to secure for the colonies both supplies and credit, must be sent back in her.

That Winslow should be chosen for delicate diplomatic service was without doubt, so he sailed with the ship, nothing loth for the journey, to be sure, that should so soon return him to the scenes with which he was in such strong personal touch.

ANOTHER TRIP TO ENGLAND.

Again, in 1635, he made a voyage to England to seek protection against the incursions of their too intrusive neighbors.

The French in the East, the Dutch in the West, were too much for them. Disaffected people were venting their spleen on the already overwhelmed people, broken by privations, sorely wounded, without any power of redress, with full knowledge that their enemies at home were placing matters to their injury before the powers that be and endangering their chance of relief from abroad.

Particularly was this spirit maintained by Thomas Morton, of Merry Mount, a man who, by his own action, was debarred from citizenship and forced to return to his native land, where he had a larger sphere, and they were rid of his little pleasantries in the way of supplying the Indians first with the rum which made them wild for deeds of murder and destruction, then putting in their hands the weapons with which to follow out the course of their wild passions.

For all of this Winslow must make excuses, as well as answer the charge against him "of officiating in church and the celebration of marriages without being in holy orders."

To suffer imprisonment for a continuance of these offices as established in Holland, where a civil contract constituted marriage, was hard indeed. Anything would serve for a cause; it was truth crushed to earth, but it would rise again, and the vindication of Edward Winslow's intentions only a matter of time, placed him on a securer platform than before.

"This decree, or law, about marriage, was published by ye Stats of ye Low Countries, Ano. 1590.

"That those of any religion, after lawfull and open publication, coming before ye Magistrates, in ye Town, or Stathouse, were to be orderly (by them) married one to another."

If ever he had the austere manners attributed to the Pilgrims, which is surely doubtful, association with the world and the best society of England must have tempered both conversation and conduct.

The sentiment connected with their life at Leyden was very dear to him; no length of absence or the silence of lessening memory could obliterate the feeling which it recalled. "I persuade myself never people on earth lived more lovingly together and

parted more sweetly than we the church at Leyden."

Dear as he was to his own section Winslow's fame was not confined to Plymouth. The Massachusetts Bay colony had deep and abiding faith in him in their dissensions; they recognized him as "a fit man to be employed in our troubles in England, both in regard to his abilities of presence, speech, courage and understanding, as also being well known to the commissioners."

They had not counted without their host, for "by his prudent management and the credit and esteem he was in with many of the members of Parliament, and principal persons then in power, prevented any prejudice to the colony from either of these applications."

All of his work in London was held in high esteem, and records of it kept in a book entitled "Calendar of State Papers."

While he was in England as agent to the colonies in 1623 he published a work which, fortunately for his aspirations, was considered quite an advancement upon the literary standard of the day. It was entitled "Good News from New England; or, a Relation of Things Remarkable in That Plantation."

With characteristic modesty he signed it simply "E. Winslow."

Edward Winslow was several times Governor, and he was the first person to hold that office by election, which was recorded in 1633.

MARSHFIELD.

Some prophetic feeling seems to have actuated Gov. Winslow in preparing during one of his stays in this country, his beautiful home at Marshfield, called "Careswell," where his wife kept watch and guard for the husband who never came—a place further, and worthily, celebrated in history, for near it, on the estate of Wm. Thomas, an early settler of Marshfield, the one who gave a site for the first meeting house and burying ground, lived Daniel Webster. The great statesman had a very natural "ambition to own every acre of the original grants to Wm. Thomas and Edward Winslow in Marshfield." His wish was mainly gratified, and he built on the "Careswell" estate a house for his son Fletcher, which has since been called "Careswell House," and where, in the burying ground sacred to those of Winslow blood, his dust mingles with many generations owning that claim. A pretty bit of sentiment comes to history in the fact that Admiral Winslow, of Kearsarge fame, received his commission in the navy from Daniel Webster.

The name of Marshfield first appears in the records on the 1st of March, 1641-2. It was represented in the colonial government in 1644, and its earliest list of freemen, taken in 1644, with only a representation of eleven people, had on it Mr. Edward Winslow, Josiah Winslow, "Kanelme" Winslow.

Only two of Winslow's children lived to grow up—Josias, born in 1627, afterward Governor, and Elizabeth, their daughter, who married first Robert Brooks, of Scituate, and second Capt. George Curwen, a prominent merchant of Salem. The two sons Edward and John did not reach maturity.

Gilbert Winslow, third brother of the Governor, who was also on the Mayflower, went to Piscataqua after the settlement

was commenced there, and the tradition is that he sailed to England and never returned.

John Winslow came in the Fortune, one of those left behind by the Speedwell, and married Mary Chilton, of historic fame, known as the Pilgrim Orphan, and for whom is claimed the honor, if such it is, of being the first to place foot on Plymouth Rock.

Kenelm and Josias, the other brothers, came before 1632 and settled at Marshfield.

Our Winslow had many gifts and did not suffer the privations of the Pilgrims, being always their envoy to other shores, where he picked up from time to time the broken thread of his former life, and won for himself honor and renown.

He was a man to take comfort in any evidences of cultivation, and says: "We refreshed ourselves with singing psalms, making joyful melody in our hearts, as well as with the voice, there being many in our congregation very expert in music, and indeed it was the sweetest music that mine ears ever heard."

Winslow had an artistic appreciation of all the elegancies and showed strong sentiment always to the events that had made impression upon him and touched his heart. His high-bred consideration for others and their wants marked him as the Christian gentleman, and it was not unnatural that on this platform he and Bradford should have affiliated.

Winslow recognized the office as well as the man, and yielded ready, prompt obedience. Adaptive himself, he had the great gift of drawing from those he was surrounded by the best of themselves, wisely recognizing that he need put forth no claim of precedence. If talent existed, it would speak for itself, and the strength of results prove his capacity to wield the power vested in him.

INTERCOURSE WITH BRADFORD.

Bradford yielded Winslow all honor. He could do so cheerfully, free from the aggressiveness that sometimes tintured his speech of those whom he could only indorse in part, and yet struggled with his fine nature to render justice to.

He calls "Edward Winslow the most accomplished of the 'old-comers,' distinguished for the important services he rendered the colony both at home and abroad, and for the eminent abilities which he displayed as the representative of the sister colony to the English Government."

Fortunately a fine portrait of Gov. Winslow, painted while on a mission to London in 1651, is in the possession of the Massachusetts Historical Society. It represents him when about 57 years of age, in the pride of his certain maturity, strong of purpose, rich in experience.

Strange to say at this late date an authentic miniature of the third Governor has been found, taken when he was a child of four years, and yet bearing such striking likeness to the future man as to insure its acceptance without the proof which accompanies it.

With no assertion, he takes his place in the foremost rank always, and where his recognized position is that of a diplomat, he shows in other places, which, in the light of the world's opinion, seem of minor consideration; still, the bearing upon the

colony was even greater than his successful missions.

Winslow "searching for food" appeals warmly to our affection, installs the man where neither literary nor diplomatic strength has placed him, and all feel a common sorrow that on his return from this voyage he should have "found the colony much weaker than when he left it. The want of bread had abated the strength and flesh of some, and swelled others, and had they not been where are diverse sorts of shellfish, they must have perished."

OLIVER CROMWELL.

Edward Winslow was a great favorite of Oliver Cromwell and his officers, and yielded to the pressure brought to bear upon him to accept employment under the Protector.

No greater proof could be given of his touch with the world, intelligent feeling of the public pulse, than the appointment he received in 1654 as first commissioner on the part of the Commonwealth to arbitrate and determine the value of English ships seized and detained by the King of Denmark.

The original commission from the Protector is now in Plymouth.

Such a preferment to a man who for thirty-four years had been a resident in the American colony with the Pilgrims and Puritans, governed by their small, narrow habits, is convincing as to the value of the desires of the colonists, even if the carrying out was restricted by their necessities, though in Winslow's case his life in Plymouth was interspersed by various trips to the old world.

From the start of his official intercourse with Europe, the spiritual welfare of the Indians was dear to the heart of the Christian Edward Winslow. He was a zealous advocate of their civilization and conversion, and it was from his unwearying efforts and strong influence came the "Society for Propagating the Gospel in New England," which was formed in England in 1647, the act of incorporation bearing date July 27, 1649.

In 1650 President Steele, of this society, wrote to the Colonial Commissioners that "Winslow was unwilling longer to be kept from his family, but his great influence with and acquaintance with members of Parliament required longer stay." I was very glad to find this record; there seemed so little account of Winslow's personal relations to his family that the question might naturally arise as to whether he had merged all his life into his foreign relations.

Both countries needed him, but there was always a "good and sufficient reason for his remaining in England."

Cromwell's pleadings were too strong for the ties that were pulling him to home, wife and children. His confidence in him was unbounded, many commissions at various times had been assigned to him, and when the Protector planned an expedition to the West Indies, with the object of attacking St. Domingo, 1655, secure in this trust, he placed Edward Winslow at the head, with Richard Holdrop and Edward Bragge as assistants.

The whole was under Admiral Penn and Gen. Venables.

Only this one man of those in authority in whom Cromwell could place absolute dependence, knowing that most were really

against him, and attached to the House of Stuart. Disagreements arose. They were men of different minds and tempers, their hearts not in the work. The troops ill appointed and badly provided for. Then, to add to their troubles, they were landed a long way from the city, and lost their way in the woods.

The army, composed of raw material, without the training which rendered them subordinate to a leader, devoid of proper nourishment, the first instincts of a soldier unknown to them, it was hardly a great military achievement to defeat these troops.

Overcome, not by army tactics, but the stern depression of "hunger, thirst, heat and fatigue," they were routed, six hundred killed, and the rest, without cowardice, took refuge in the vessels, started to Jamaica, and the army, which really never existed, except on the roll call, surrendered.

WINSLOW'S DEATH.

All this wore sadly upon high-spirited Winslow, the chagrin of defeat—for he did not live to enjoy the after victory—told on his constitution, worn by heat, fatigue and anxiety, threw him into a fever, and the sacrificed life of Edward Winslow, third Governor of Plymouth Colony, always its diplomatic head, ended the 8th day of May, 1655, in his 60th year, on the ship in which he was going from Hispaniola to Jamaica.

What mattered it that he was buried with funeral honors; that the booming guns told to all the position of the man consigned to the great deep?

The country of his love and adoption will never cease to regret this valued life thrown away to satisfy a man's ambition.

GOV. WINSLOW'S SON.

Gov. Josias Winslow, the first native-born Governor of the colonies, married in 1657 Penelope Pelham, daughter of Herbert Pelham, Esq., of England.

Her fate met her in an unusual way, as there were few temptations for a beautiful woman to make a pleasure trip to America. The father, always interested in the colonies, with a desire to see and assist, if possible, their struggles for advancement, made them his personal care, and, with his young daughter for a companion, sought New England.

The result was the old, old story, and Penelope Pelham, for love of Josias Winslow, said to be the handsomest and most courtly man in New England, gave up the refinements of her English home and remained in the country. Were the story all told, there were less than forty years of improvement and comfort as a compensation.

But it was not always thus. Everything being valued by contrast, she had the future pleasure, as first lady of the land, of welcoming to her beautiful home in Marshfield the great and good of all nations who visited the home of her adoption.

The courtesy of her dispensing, the cordiality and dignity of her hospitality, form the record of the times. Her personal beauty fortunately is perpetuated, and if reproduction in descendants is an evidence of strength, that existing, Mrs. Winslow must be credited with force of character.

There were four children by this marriage, two sons and two daughters, but only one son lived to manhood, Isaac, who mar-

ried Sarah, daughter of John and Elizabeth Paddy Wensley, of Boston, July 11, 1700, and through her their descendants were related to both Elder Brewster and Gov. Prince.

Sad to relate, Gov. Edward Winslow has no one bearing the name who can claim lineal descent from him.

Josiah Winslow stood on a pinnacle from any point of view, diplomatic, social or military, and the fact that his physical condition was far from robust, shows strongly the metal of the man, who, under such odds, could do so much.

He filled many offices, was magistrate, Governor, and in 1675 commander-in-chief of all the colonies of New England in the war against the Indians, known as "Philip's War." Being the bright and shining mark he suffered severely through no fault of his own from the animosity of the red man. The encroachments they made upon him rendered him virtually homeless, his wife and children forced to seek a place of safety.

And in one sense what made it harder to bear was that this persecution was a retaliation without foundation, the Indians themselves alleging no cause of discontent except the execution of three murderers (Saccamons), who, it is asserted, acknowledged the fairness of their trial, and one confessed his crime.

THE QUAKERS.

By contrast of thought and life the Quakers were always a source of contention, and Gov. Josias (as he always wrote his name), strong in his sense of justice, resented the treatment they received.

Gov. Prince spent much of his time in reducing their rights and privileges to a minimum, and even suspended from the claims of citizenship those who showed sympathy with that sect.

These Winslow reinstated immediately on his accession, and during his administration managed to infuse an outward semblance at least of regard for their creed, where there was no overt action against the government.

Hardly a martyr, but certainly a sufferer from the cause he espoused, which, in his case meant every line that had a touch of prevention, of humanity and Christian charity. Josiah Winslow died December 18, 1680.

He was "buried at the expense of the colony in testimony of its endeared love and affection for him," his tombstone bearing the inscription: "The Hon'ble Josiah Winslow, Gov'r of New Plymouth, Dyed December ye 18th, 1680, Aetatis, 52."

Being in England with his father on one of his missions, Gov. Josias Winslow's portrait was painted there.

Mrs. Winslow survived her husband twenty-three years, dying December 7, 1703, in the 74th year of her age. Her portrait, too, exists, and is a very representative type of the high-bred Puritan face history has handed down to us.

The Winslow descent has made fine history by sea and land—the "living present" gives us many bearing the name—but the sorrow must always exist that not one comes in a direct line from Edward Winslow, third signer of the compact on the Mayflower off Cape Cod, 1620, and third Governor of New Plymouth, the first by elective voice of the people.

Genealogical Register of Plymouth Families
by William T. Davis 1977

Elihu Brett, and had Mary, 1699, m. Joseph Packard; John, 1701; Margaret, 1704, m. Nathaniel Harvey; Experience, m. John Randall; Martha, m. Samuel Harden and James Pratt; Melitabel, m. James Stacy. JONAS, Bridgewater, son of above, m., 1724, Patience, d. of Samuel Hayward, and had Susanna, 1727, m. David Johnson; Daniel, 1732. JONAS, Bridgewater, son of Daniel, m., 1788, Abigail, d. of Jonathan Hayward, and had Abigail, 1706, m. Jacob Hayward; Jonah, 1702, now living in Kingston; Polly Hayward, 1705, m. Leonard Hill; Lyman, 1708. He m., 2d, 1800, Hannah, sister of 1st wife, and had Clement, 1801; Henry Williams, 1803; Nathan, 1806; Emeline Frances, 1808; Augustus, 1811; Benjamin, 1815. He m., 3d, 1816, Fredove, wid. of William Fobes. JONAH, Kingston, son of above, m. Abigail, d. of Nathaniel Foster, and had Edward, 1810; George Frederick, 1821; Foster, 1824, m. Adaline Eaton; Jonah, 1826; William Henry, 1828; Julia Parris Foster, 1831, m. Francis Oliver Leach; Abby A., 1834, m. Green Evans; Jonah, 1836; Angeline, 1839, m. Joseph Packard. JONAH, Kingston, son of above, m. Betsey A. Bagnall and Caroline Reach, and had Caroline. RICHARD, Plymouth, 1634, m., 1639, Ann Glass, and had Richard, who m. Patience Bonum, 1670. THOMAS, Bridgewater, son of 1st Benjamin, m., 1710, Mary, d. of Samuel Kingsley, and had Susanna, 1718, m. Ephraim Fobes; Thomas, 1721, m. Susanna Ames; Jonah, 1723; Mary, 1725, m. Isaac Johnson; Rhoda, 1727, m. Daniel Lothrop; Betty, 1731, m. James Howard; Zephaniah, 1733; Nathan, 1738. ZEPHANIAH, Bridgewater, son of above, m., 1754, Bethiah, d. of Thomas Hayward, and had Zephaniah, 1757. ZEPHANIAH, Kingston, son of above, m. Hannah, d. of John Thomas, and had John Thomas; Betsey, 1703; Sarah, and Bethiah.

WILSON, JOHN D., from Salem, m. Anna, d. of Thomas Nicolson, 1814. JOHN BARKLEY, son of John and his wife Clara Van Baker of the Hague, born in Antwerp, came to Plymouth about 1835, and m. Mary, d. of Stephen Rogers, by whom he had Elizabeth; John Barkley, 1849, m. Cora, d. of Samuel M. Whitten; Stephen Rogers, 1852, m. Alice, d. of Eleazer H. Barnes. WING, JEDEDIAH, from Rochester, pub., 1734, to Elizabeth Gifford. REUBEN, from Warren, m., 1825, Mrs. Caroline Burgess.

WINSLOW, ANTHONY, Bridgewater, son of 2d Gilbert, m. Deborah, d. of William Barker, and had Priscilla, m. James Thomas; and Deborah, m. Nathaniel Clift. CHARLES, Hanover, son of 2d Thomas, m., 1827, Margaret L. Litchfield, and had Charles L., 1828; Rachel F., 1832; Helen, 1838. EDWARD, Drottwich, England, son of 1st Kenelm, m., probably, Eleanor Pelham of Drottwich, and had Richard about 1586. He m., 2d, 1594, Magdalene Olyver, and had Edward, 1595; John, 1597; Eleanor, 1598; Kenelm, 1599; Gilbert, 1600; Elizabeth, 1602; Magdalene, 1604; Josiah, 1606. EDWARD, son of above, came in the Mayflower 1620. He m. in Leyden, 1618, Elizabeth Barker from Chatsun, or Chester, or Chesham, England, and brought her with him. He m., 2d, 1621, Susanna (Fuller) White, wid. of William, and had before 1627, Edward and John. After that date he had Edward again; Josiah, 1628; Elizabeth, m. Robert Roaks and George Curwin of Salem. EDWARD, son of 1st Isaac, m. Hannah, d. of Thomas Howland, and wid. of William Dyer, 1741, and had John, 1741; Penelope, 1743; Sarah,

1745; Edward, 1746. He was a loyalist, and removed to Halifax 1776, where he died 1784. EDWARD, son of above, m. Mary Symonds, and had Thomas Asor Coffin, Ward Chipman, Brooks Watson; Mary, m. Edward W. Miller; Edward; Sarah, m. Lawrence B. Rainsford; Hannah, Penelope, John Francis Wentworth, Daniel, Christian; Eliza Chapman, m. Dr. Sampson of the British army; and Catherine Wilden. He was also a loyalist, and removed to New Brunswick in 1776, before his marriage, and had John, 1815. EDWARD, Boston, son of 1st John, m. Sarah Hilton, d. of Edward Hutchinson, 1601; Sarah, 1603; Mary, 1605. He m., 2d, Elizabeth, d. of Edward Hutchinson, and had Edward, 1609; Catherine, 1672; Elizabeth, 1674; Ann, 1678. EDWARD, Duxbury, son of 9th Edward, m., 1755, Eleanor Pierce, and had David, 1756; Edward, 1761; Joshua, Thomas; Edward, 1769; George, Abigail. EDWARD, Duxbury, son of above, m. Rebecca Harlow of Plymouth; George, 1800; George, 1768; Betsey, 1768, m. Daniel Gale of Plymouth; George, 1800; Polly, 1802; Seth, 1807; Samuel, 1808; Rebecca, 1811. EDWARD, Rochester, son of 3d Kenelm, by wife Sarah, m. James Foster; Mercy, 1712, m. Thomas Winslow; James; Lydia, 1709, m. James Foster; Mercy, 1712, m. Chillingworth Foster; Sarah, 1707, m. Thomas Lincoln and James Whitcomb; Thankful, 1715, m. Josephus Hammond. EDWARD, Rochester, son of above, m. Hannah, d. of 6th Kenelm, and had Edward, 1729; Clark, 1731; Sarah, 1733; Enoch, 1735; Isaac, 1738; Hannah, 1740; Ezra, 1742; Bethiah, 1744. He m., 2d, 1746, Rachel, d. of 3d Josiah, and had Rachel, 1749; Tisdale, 1751; Josiah, 1753; Thankful, 1755; Benjamin, 1758; Mercy, 1763. He m., 3d, wid. Hannah Winslow of Dighton. EDWARD BYRON, Frederickton, N. B., son of John Francis Wentworth, m. Emma B. Orr, and had Wentworth Byron, Jasper Andrews, John James Frazier, and Jane Caroline. ELEAZER ROBINS, Newton, son of Shadrach, m., 1813, Ann, d. of David Corbet of Boston, and had sixteen children, one of whom is Hon. John of New York and Brooklyn. FRANCIS EDWARD, Chatham, N. B., son of John Francis Wentworth, m. Constance Hansard, and had Edward Pelham, Warren Copley, Laura, Edith, and Charlotte. GEORGE, Duxbury, son of 6th Edward, m., 1781, Sarah G. Thomas. GILBERT, son of 1st Edward, came in the Mayflower 1620, returned to England after 1624, and died in 1650. GILBERT, Marshfield, son of 1st Nathaniel, m., 1698, Mercy, d. of Josiah Snow, and had Issachar, 1699; Barnabas, 1701; Gilbert, 1704; Anthony, 1707; Mercy, 1710; Rebecca, 1712; Job, 1715; Benjamin, 1717; Lydia, 1720. ISAAC, Marshfield, son of 2d Josiah, m., 1700, Sarah, d. of John Wensley of Boston, and had Josiah, 1701; John, 1702; Penelope, 1704, m. James Warren; Elizabeth, 1707, m. Benjamin Marston of Salem; Anna, 1709; Edward, 1714. ISAAC, Marshfield, son of 3d John, m., 1768, Elizabeth, d. of Benjamin Stockbridge of Scituate, and had Elizabeth, m. Kilburn Whitman; Isaac; Sarah, m. Ebenezer Clapp; Ruth S., 1771, m. Josiah C. Shaw and Thomas Dingley; John, 1774. He m., 2d, Francis, d. of Ebenezer Gay of Hingham. ISAAC, Charlestown, son of 1st John, m., 1696, Mary, d. of Increase Nowell, and had Parnel, 1697; Isaac, 1670. ISAAC, Hingham, son of 4th John, m., 1848, Abby Frothingham, d. of Ebenezer Gay, and had Edward Gay, 1848. JAMES, Freetown, son of 3d Josiah, m., 1738, Charity Hodges, and had

Mehitabel, 1739, m. Jesse Bullock of Rehoboth; Ephraim, 1741, m. Hannah, d. of Thomas Gilbert; Margaret, 1743, m. David Talbot; Joseph, 1746, m. Mary Crane of Berkeley; James, 1748, m. Sarah Barnaby, and wid. Ruth Clark, d. of Ivory Hovey; Shadrach, 1750; Bethiah, 1753; Thankful, 1754, m. Benjamin Evans; Isaac, 1759. — JAMES, Rochester, son of 1st Nathaniel, by wife Mary, had Seth, 1690; Mary, 1701; Bathsheba, 1706; James, 1709; Job, 1712; Nathaniel, 1715. By a 2d wife, Elizabeth, he had Peter, 1720. Job, Freetown, son of 2d Kenelm, m. Ruth, d. of Daniel Cole of Eastham, and had James, 1687; John, and others. JOHN, son of 1st Edward, came in the Fortune, 1621, and m., about 1627, Mary, d. of James Chilton, who came in the Mayflower, 1620, and had Susanna, m. Robert Latham; Mary, 1630, m. Edward Gray; Edward; Sarah, m. Miles Standish and Tobias Payne and Richard Middlecott; John, Joseph, Samuel, 1641; Isaac, 1644; Anne, m. a LeBlond; Benjamin, 1653. In 1657 he removed to Boston, and died 1674. JOHX, Boston, son of above, by wife Elizabeth, had John, 1680; Ann, 1670. He m., 2d, a wife Judith. JOHN, known as General Winslow, son of 1st Isaac, m., 1726, Mary, d. of Isaac Little, and had Josiah, 1730; Pelham, 1737; Isaac, 1739. He m., 2d, a wid. Johnson, born Barker of Hingham, where he died 1774. JOHX, son of 2d Isaac, m. Susanna Ball, and had John, 1801; Elizabeth S., m. Seneca White; Frances Gay, 1805; Penelope Pelham, m. George W. Nichols; Pelham, 1809; Isaac, Edward, and Edward Josiah. JOHN, Rochester, son of 3d Kenelm, who died 1755, m., 1722, Bethiah, d. of Stephen Andrews of Rochester, and had John, 1722; Deborah, 1724; Jedediah, 1727; Nathaniel, 1730; Bethiah, 1732; Lemuel, 1734; Prince, 1737; Stephen, 1739; Elizabeth. JOHN, Rochester, son of above, who died 1774, m., 1745, Bethiah Sherman, and had Stephen, 1747; Bethiah, 1748, m. Increase Clapp; Abigail, 1750; Kessiah, 1752, m. Elijah Dexter; John, 1755; Lemuel, 1757; Zephaniah, 1760; Micah, 1761; Deborah, 1763; Elizabeth; and Sarah, 1768. JOHN, Wareham, son of 1st Jonathan, by wife Mary had William; Faith, m. a Randall; Eleanor, m. a Besse; Sarah; Mary, m. a Wood. JOHN, Rochester, son of 6th John, had John, Paul, Dorcas, Kenelm, and Nathan. JOHN, Bridgewater, m., about 1822, Emeline, d. of Edward Mitchell. JOHN FRANCIS WESTWORTH, Woodstock, N. B., son of 4th Edward, m. Jane C. Rainsford, and had Francis Edward, John Coffin, Mary; Elizabeth, m. John Jacobs; Thomas Bradshaw, Wentworth, and Edward Byron. JOHN COFFIN, Woodstock, son of above, m. Charlotte O'Donnell, and had John Norman, Minnie O'Donnell, Jesse K., and Pauline. JOXATHAN, Marshfield, son of 2d Josiah, m. Ruth, d. of William Sargent of Barnstable, and had John, 1694. JOSIAH, son of 1st Edward, came in the White Angel to Saco 1631, and after a residence in Scluate removed to Marshfield. He m., 1637, Margaret, d. of Thomas Bourne, and had Elizabeth, 1637; Jonathan, 1638; Mary, 1640, m. John Tracy; Margaret, 1641, m. John Miller; Rebecca, 1642, m. John Thatcher of Yarmouth; Hannah, 1644, m. William Crow and John Sturtevant. JOSIAH, son of 2d Edward, m., 1651, Penelope, d. of Herbert Pelham, and had Elizabeth, 1664, m. Stephen Burton; Edward, 1667; Isaac, 1670. JOSIAH, Freetown, son of 3d Kenelm, m., 1695, Margaret, d. of James Tisdale of Taunton, and had Josiah, 1697, m. Sarah Hayward of Bridgewater; Mercy, 1700, m.

James Whitcomb of Rochester; Ebenezer, 1705, m. Esther Atwood, and had Benjamin of Bertley, m. Phoebe Pierce; Edward, 1709; James, 1712; Margaret, 1716, m. John King of Norton; Mary, 1720, m. Daniel Hunt; Rachel, 1722, m. Edward Winslow. JOSEPH, Boston, son of 1st John, by wife Sarah, had Mary, 1674; Joseph, 1677. JOSUUA, Duxbury, grandson of 6th Kenelm, through his son Kenelm, m. Hannah Delano, 1772, and wid. Salome Delano, 1780. KENELM, of Kempsey, England, died in Worcester, England, 1607. He had, by wife Catherine, Edward, 1560. KENELM, son of 1st Edward, came over about 1629, and m. Eleanor (Newton) Adams, wid. of John, and had Kenelm, 1635; Ellen, 1637, m. Samuel Baker; Nathaniel, 1639; Job, 1641. KENELM, Yarmouth, son of above, m., 1667, Mercy, d. of Peter Worden, and had Kenelm, 1685; Josiah, 1670; Thomas, 1673; Samuel, 1674; Mercy, 1676; Nathaniel, and Edward, 1680. He m., 2d, Damaris, and had Damaris, m. Jonathan Small; Elizabeth, m. Andrew Clark of Harwich; Eleanor, m. Shubael Hamblin; and John. KENELM, Marshfield, son of 1st Nathaniel, m. Abigail Waterman, and had Kenelm, 1717, m. Abigail, d. of Sylvanus Bourne of Barnstable; Eleanor, 1718; Joseph; Sarah, m. a Smith; Abigail, m. a Lewis; Faith, m. Joseph Taylor; and Nathaniel. He prob. had a 2d wife. KENELM, Bridgewater, brother of 9th John, m. Orza, d. of Benjamin Pope, about 1822. KENELM, Yarmouth, son of 3d Kenelm, m. Bethiah, d. of Gershom Hall of Yarmouth, and had Bethiah, m. John Wing; Mercy, m. Philip Vincent; Rebecca, m. Samuel Rider; Thankful, m. Theophilus Crosby; Kenelm, m. Zerviah Rider; Thomas, m. Mehtabel Winslow; Mary, m. Ebenezer Clapp of Dorchester; Hannah, m. Edward Winslow; Seth, m. Thankful Sears and Priscilla Freeman. MICAH, Rochester, son of 6th John, had a wife Hannah. NATHANIEL, Marshfield, son of 2d Kenelm, m. Faith, d. of John Miller of Yarmouth, 1634, and had Faith, 1635; Nathaniel, 1667; James, 1669; Gilbert, 1673; Kenelm, 1675; Eleanor, 1677, m. John Jones; Josiah, 1681; and John. NATHANIEL, Marshfield, son of above, m. Lydia, d. of Josiah Snow, 1692, and had Lydia, 1693, m. Joseph Thomas; Thankful, 1695; Snow, 1698; Oliver, 1702; Deborah, 1708; Padraic, 1710; Nathaniel, 1712, m. Susanna Bryant. He m., 2d, Deborah Bryant, 1716, and had Ruth, 1718; and Abiah. NATHANIEL, Marshfield, son of 4th Kenelm, by wife Lydia, and had Ruth, m. a Wadsworth. NATHANIEL, Hanover, son of Oliver, m. Sarah Hatch, 1796, and had Nathaniel, 1767; Sarah, 1769, m. Thomas Waterman and Ebenezer Cope-land; Walter, 1772; Joseph, 1774; Anna, 1776, m. William Putnam Ripley of Plymouth; Judith, 1780, m. Elisha Tolman; Lydia, 1786, m. Anthony Collamore of Pembroke; and William, 1788. NATHANIEL, Hanover, son of above, m. Clarissa, d. of Ebenezer Curtis, 1796, and had Josiah, m. Abigail, d. of Lemuel Curtis. OLIVER, Scluate, son of 2d Nathaniel, m. Agatha Bryant and Bethiah Prior, and had Oliver; Ruth, 1739; Nathaniel, 1741; John, 1743; Bethiah, 1751; and Joseph, 1753. PELHAM, son of 3d John, m. Joanna, d. of Gideon White, about 1770, and had Mary, 1771, m. Henry Warren; Joanna, 1773, m. Nathan Hayward; and Penelope Pelham. RICIMOND, Hanover, son of 2d Thomas, m. Harriet Howard of Duxbury, 1828, and had Samuel R., 1829, m. Elizabeth, d. of Clement Bates of Plymouth; James B., 1830; Rebecca H., 1832; Erastus B., 1834; John A., 1837; Joshua

S., 1740; Daniel W., 1812; Frederick R., 1848. SAMUEL, Boston, son of 1st John, m. Hannah, d. of Walter Briggs, and had Mary, 1678; Samuel, and Richard. SAMUEL, Rochester, son of 3d Kenelm, m., 1700, Bethiah Holbrook. He m., 2d, 1763, Mercy King, and had Mercy, 1705; Elizabeth, 1707; Anne, 1709; Thomas, 1711; Kenelm, 1712; Judith, 1716. He m., 3d, 1789, Ruth Briggs. SHADRACH, Freetown, son of 1st James, m., 1781, Elizabeth, d. of Eleazer Robbins of Foxboro', and had Betsy Peck, 1783; Eleazer Robbins, 1788; James, 1788; Isaac, 1791, m. Leonora, d. of Francis Jones of Raynham; Jesse, 1794, m. Caroline Ray of Newton; Samuel, 1797; Thomas Jefferson, 1800; Mary, 1802; Fanny, 1805, m. Samuel Billings Leonard; Joseph, 1807. SNOW, Marshfield, son of 2d Nathaniel, m., 1728, Deborah Bryant, and had Snow, Josiah, Lydia, and Deborah. THOMAS, a descendant from 1st Kenelm, m. Hannah Torrey, 1779, and had Thomas. THOMAS, Innover, son of above, m. Ruth Grose, 1800, and had Thomas G., 1800, m. Susan W. Gardner of Hingham and a Pollard of Maine; Joshua, 1801; Charles, 1803; Richmond, 1804; Pelham, 1805; Lucy T., 1808, m. George Hildreth of Dorchester; Henry, 1810; William, 1812; Ruth G., 1814; Elizabeth, 1816; Eleanor J., 1816, m. Isaiah Jenkins; Samuel, 1818; Mary, 1819, m. David Freeman of Duxbury; Priscilla B., 1821; and Samuel L. F., 1825. (For other branches of the Winslow family, see Holton's Winslow Genealogy.)

WINSON, WILLIAM D., of Kingston, m. Hannah Howard, 1827.

WINTER, CHRISTOPHER, m., about 1635, Jane Cooper, and had John; Mary, m. John Reed; Naomi, m. a Turner; Anna, m. a Badson; Martha, m. John Hewitt. He had a brother Timothy at Braintree, who had a son Christopher.

WISWALL, DANIEL, Cambridge, son of Ebenezer, m. Lydia Tufts of Medford, and had George Ricks, 1776. EBENEZER, probably Dorchester, son of Enoch, m. Ann Capen, 1721, and had Ebenezer, 1722; Oliver, 1725; Noah, 1727; Daniel, 1729; Esther, 1732; Samuel, 1734; Elijah, 1738; Ann, 1740; Hannah, 1742; Ichabod, 1743. EXOCH, Dorchester, son of Thomas, m., 1657, Elizabeth, d. of John Oliver of Boston, and had John, 1658; Enoch, 1661; Hannah, 1662; Oliver, 1665; Elizabeth, 1667; Esther, 1669; Susanna, 1672; Enoch, 1675; Mary, 1677; Samuel, 1679; Enoch and Ebenezer, twins, 1683. GEORGE RICKS, son of Daniel, m. Salome Nickerson of Chatham, and removed from Provincetown, where he had lived after his father's death, to Plymouth, and had Lydia Tufts, 1779, m. John Foster Dunham; John, 1801; Salome, 1802, m. Seth Luce Holmes; Hannah, 1804, m. John Atwood; Rebecca, 1806; George R., 1808, m. Elizabeth Adams; Paulina, 1808; Rebecca, and Paulina again, 1814. ICHABOD, Duxbury, son of Thomas, m., 1679, Priscilla, d. of William Peabodie, and had Mary, 1680, m. John Wadsworth; Hannah, 1682, m. John Robinson; Peleg, 1684; Percz, 1689; Mercy; Priscilla, m. Samuel Seaberry; and Deborah. JOHN, son of George Ricks, m. Priscilla Perkins of Plymouth, and had Priscilla Thomas, 1828, m. Clifford Thompson of Halifax; and John Bradford, 1837. THOMAS, Cambridge and Dorchester, came from England about 1634, with a brother John, a wife Elizabeth, and son Enoch, born about 1633. He had afterwards Esther, m. William Johnson of Woburn; Ichabod, Noah; Mary, m. Samuel Payson of Dorchester; Sarah, m. Nathaniel Holmes; Ebenezer, 1646; Elizabeth, 1649.

WITHERELL, WETHERELL, or WITHERLE, JOHN, son of 1st William of Scituate, had John, 1675; William, 1678; Thomas, 1681; Joshua, 1683. SAMUEL, Marshfield, m. Anna Rogers, 1698. THOMAS, son of John, moved to Plymouth, and by wife Rebecca, had Rebecca, 1713, m. James Easdel; Thomas, 1715; William, 1718; James, 1720; Mary, 1722, m. Thomas Mayhew, and her gravestone is in the old pest-house grounds near Gallow's Lane; John, 1725, m. Sarah Crandon, died in Surinam; Mercy, 1727, m. Thomas Foster; Lemuel, 1729; Hannah, 1732. THOMAS, son of above, m. Elizabeth, d. of Isaac Lothrop, 1738, and had Hannah, 1739; Lemuel, 1741; Thomas, 1742. THOMAS, son of above, m. Ann, d. of John May, 1768, and had William, 1769; Ann May, 1771, m. Joseph Bartlett; Thomas, 1773; Elizabeth, 1775. He m., 2d, Sarah, d. of Thomas Jackson, 1780, and had William, 1781; Isaac, 1783; Sarah, 1787, m. James Bartlett; Lucia, 1789; and Harriet, 1792. THOMAS, son of above, m. Nancy, d. of Ichabod Shaw, 1793, and had John May, 1800; Anna May, 1801; William Thomas, 1802; Eliza Ann, 1804, m. William H. Whitelsey; Sarah, 1805, m. Horatio P. Blood; and Isaac, 1806, m. Elizabeth P. Webster of Milton and Mary Louisa Quincy of Portland. He m., 2d, Lois Robbins, 1812, and had Lothrop, Charles May, Nancy Shaw, and Sylvanus James. WILLIAM, Scituate, 1644, came from Maidstone, England, 1635, with wife Mary and three children, one of whom was Samuel. He had born in this country John, Theophilus; Elizabeth, m. John Bryant; Sarah, 1644, m. Israel Hobart; Hannah, 1646; and Mary, m. Thomas Oldham. WILLIAM, son of 1st Thomas, by wife Rebecca, had Hannah, 1740; Rebecca, 1744; and possibly Sarah, who m. Perez Tilson, 1764. A branch of this family, of which William Howe of Castine is a member, and which is descended from Theophilus, son of 1st William, assumed the name of Witherell.

WOOD, ABIELE, Middleboro', son of Henry, m. Abiah Bowen, and had Elathan, 1689; Abiah, 1689; Abiel, 1691; Timothy, 1693; Jerusha, 1695; Ebenezer, 1697; Judah, 1700; Thomas, 1703. ALVAH, came to Plymouth from Hanover about 1835, with wife Huldah, d. of Eells Damon, and children Alvah, m. Harriet N., d. of Samuel Eliot; Israel, m., 1844, Sabin Ann Churchill; Samuel N., m., 1846, Abigail Westgate; and Elvira Jane, m., 1849, James P. Jordan. DAVID, Middleboro', son of Henry, m. Mary, wid. of Francis Coombs, and d. of Cuthbert Cuthbertson, and had John, 1690, David, 1688; and Jabez, 1691, m. Hannah Nelson. DAVID, Middleboro', son of above, m. Joanna Tilson, 1720, and had David, 1725; Francis, Edmund, and Joanna. DAVID, Middleboro', son of above, m. Rebecca Pratt, 1746, and had David, 1748; Joanna, m. James Waterman; Lydia, Rebecca, and Kesiah. DAVID, Plymouth, son of above, m., 1770, Elizabeth Doten, and had Azubah, m. Nicholas Drew; Zilphia, m. Caleb Dunham; Polly, m. John Bailey; Elizabeth; Eliab, 1788; Oliver, 1791. EBENEZER, Middleboro', son of Abiel, m. Lydia Lovell, and had Silas, Timothy, Sarah, 1784; Ebenezer; Lydia, m. Abijah Nichols, Ebenezer Elms, and a Brown; Simeon, Levi, Abiel, and Mary. EBENEZER, Middleboro', son of above, m. Sally Bennett, and had Wilkes, Gorham, Horatio G., and Sally. ELIAB, son of 4th David, m. Persis Rickard, and had Persis, m. David Holmes; Eliab, m. Betsy Sherman;

[Return to normal view](#)

Johanson Family Tree-Roots spreading from Sweden, Medieval England, Massachusetts, and South Carolina

Entries: 78908 Updated: 2017-06-28 21:19:10 UTC (Wed) Owner: Susan Johanson

Home Page: [The Johanson-Clark-Metcalf-Beach Family Page](#) Note: You will leave RootsWeb

[Display pedigree in text format](#)

1 Nicholas FULLER

B: ABT 1510

P: Neat's Hall, Kent, England

D: 1545

P: London, London, England

2 Thomas FULLER

B: ABT 1480

P: Neat's Hall, Isle of Sheppy, Kent, England

M:

P:

D: 1540

P:

4 Thomas FULLER

B: ABT 1442

P: Markshall, Essex, England

M:

P:

D: UNKNOWN

P:

8 Thomas FULLER

B: ABT 1415

P: Mark's Hall, Essex, England

M:

P:

D: UNKNOWN

P:

9 Agnes ASHWELL

B: ABT 1420

P: Cambridgeshire, England

D: UNKNOWN

P:

10 Benedict de KENT

B: ABT 1410

P: Kent, England

M:

P:

D: UNKNOWN

P:

11

B:

P:

D:

P:

12 Richard CLARELL

B: ABT 1430

P: Edgcote, Northamptonshire, E

M:

P:

D: 1478

P:

13 Margaret WHITTINGHAM

B: ABT 1438

P: Edgcote, Northamptonshire, E

D: AFT 1492

P:

14

B:

P:

M:

P:

D:

P:

15

B:

P:

D:

P:

3 Margaret CLARELL

B: ABT 1482

P: Edgcote, Northamptonshire, England

D: UNKNOWN

P:

7 Isabel RIDGELEY

B: ABT 1460

P: England

D: UNKNOWN

P:

See Nicholas Fuller 1543-1620 15 children

Family Group Record

Page 1 of 2

Husband Nicholas Fuller Sr				
Born	1510	Place	Neat's Hall, Kent, England	LDS ordinance dates
Christened		Place		Baptized
Died	25 Jan 1545	Place	London, England	Endowed
Buried		Place		Sealed to parents
Married		Place		Sealed to spouse
Husband's father				
Husband's mother				

Wife Elizabeth Standish				
Born	Abt 1512	Place		LDS ordinance dates
Christened		Place		Baptized
Died		Place		Endowed
Buried		Place		Sealed to parents
Wife's father				
Wife's mother				

Children List each child in order of birth.				
1	M	Nicholas Fuller (Sir)		
		Born	Abt 1544	Place
		Christened		Place
		Died	By 26 May 1620	Place
		Buried		Place
		Spouse		
		Married		
		Sealed to spouse		
2	M	Cuthbert Fuller		
		Born	4 Sep 1542	Place
		Christened		Place
		Died		Place
		Buried		Place
		Spouse		
		Married		
		Sealed to spouse		

Prepared by	Gladys LaVon (Lowe) Treadway	Address	1104 Kimberly Rd. Unit # 403
Phone	(563) 355-2095		Bettendorf, IA 52722-4111
E-mail address	gltreadway77@outlook.com		
Date prepared	15 Jun 2018		Scott

Family Group Record

Page 2 of 2

Husband	Nicholas Fuller Sr										
Wife	Elizabeth Standish										
Notes											
HUSBAND - Nicholas Fuller Sr The will of Nicholas of London Citizen and Mercer dated Jan 10 1515 proved Jan 25 1545. To be buried in church of All Hallowes London. Elizabeth my beloved wife, Cuthbert Fuller and Nicholas Fuller my sons, John Fuller my base son He is given at ligitimate in Visitations so that the word is probably used in the sense of bad My brother James Fuller Frank Ann Phillip and Elizabeth children of my late brother thomas My cousin Ann Fuller daughter of Andrew Fuller My brother John Fuller My cousin Howard My sister Barbara My dere wife Elizabeth Castlemain and again my prudent wife mentions Mark Henry and Bichd Thurston and John Culeston. Nicholas Fuller and Elizabeth Castlemain md by 1542 when the first son Cuthbert born 4 Sep 1542 London, Eng. 2nd son Nicholas b abt 1544 in Chamberhouse Berkshire, Eng. Bapt 20 Apr 1544, son of Nicholas Fuller of London and Elizabeth, dau of Thomas Standish of Duxbury. (Nicholas Fuller) CHILD 1 - Nicholas Fuller (Sir) Death also listed as 23 Feb 1619 as well as by 26 May 1620 in Prison, tower of London. Will listed his wife and children. Nicholas Fullers will listed his 2 sons and 5 daughters and who they married. According to Reference : Gray's Inn Pension book, Volume 1 pg 269 has much info Nicholas who died in prison but no date was given other then Sat in Pension from 1587 to 1619 (not sure this means he died at this time. This info was written up in a few pages of "Who Were The Pilgrims" by Florance Fuller Hyde (copy included.) It has been always stated that Edward Fuller was son of Robert Fuller, butcher in Redenhall, Norfolk, England md to Ann ? and father Robert Fuller and mother Sarah Dunkthorn) These several pages in this article says Nicholas Fuller, a barrester of Stepney, England (London) was the father of Edward Fuller (who went to US) on the Mayflower with wife Ann and brother Dr Samuel Fuller and sister Ann Susannah Fuller wife of William White. Edward was also a barrister. Records stated that Nicholas had 3 sons, 2 daughters: Edward, Samuel, Mary, wife of William Pinder and Twins, Nicholas and Susannah, wife of William White. * According to his will he did not have those children. Nicholas went to prison becaused thinking to help his clients. The records of Gray's Inn, one of the ancient Inns of Court, furnished author by the Librarian at Gray's Inn, contain the following information: Re: Nicholas Fuller: <table border="0"> <tr> <td>Admitted to Gray's Inn</td> <td>1563</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Ancient</td> <td>1574 June 17</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Autumn Reader</td> <td>1587 26 May</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Treasurer (Elected)</td> <td>1590 Nov 19</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Dean of the Chapel</td> <td>1601 Nov 18</td> </tr> </table> Sat in Pension from 1587 to 1619 He was a Reader of Staple Inn. His Coat of Arms are in the South window of Gray's Inn Hall. As shown in the attached extract from the Records Nicholas Fuller died somewhere before May 26, 1620. Reference: The Pension Book of Gray's Inn, Volume 1 pg 237 (which is include here). Tells of what happend to Nicholas Fuller and where was ordered by Pension that Mrs Pinder, wyfe of Mr Pinder sometime a fellow of this societie and daughter to Mr Nicholas Fuller sometyne a Reader of the same (pension to go to son of Mrs Pinder, grandson of Nicholas, Michael who was deceased and so pension to go to his grandson Samuel Fuller, son of Edward. More on this info will have copy of it. No mention of who Nicholas's wife was. She was Sarah Backhouse His will did list all his children which I have a copy included and none of these are his children except he had a son Nicholas who outlived him by 4 months and had a son Nicholas age 2. His will listed all his children and these are not listed so I would have to go by his will even thought the English Law info should also be correct but apparently isn't if you believe his will.		Admitted to Gray's Inn	1563	Ancient	1574 June 17	Autumn Reader	1587 26 May	Treasurer (Elected)	1590 Nov 19	Dean of the Chapel	1601 Nov 18
Admitted to Gray's Inn	1563										
Ancient	1574 June 17										
Autumn Reader	1587 26 May										
Treasurer (Elected)	1590 Nov 19										
Dean of the Chapel	1601 Nov 18										

Family Group Record

Husband Nicholas Fuller (Sir)				
Born	Abt 1544	Place	Stepney, England	LDS ordinance dates
Christened		Place		Baptized
Died	By 26 May 1620	Place	Prison? Stepney, London, Eng	Endowed
Buried		Place		Sealed to parents
Married	18 Jan 1574	Place		Sealed to spouse
Husband's father		Nicholas Fuller Sr		
Husband's mother		Elizabeth Standish		
Wife Sarah Backhouse				
Born		Place		LDS ordinance dates
Christened		Place		Baptized
Died		Place		Endowed
Buried		Place		Sealed to parents
Wife's father		Nicholas Backhouse		
Wife's mother				
Children List each child in order of birth.				LDS ordinance dates
1 M Nicholas Fuller				Temple
Born	1577	Place		Baptized
Christened		Place		Endowed
Died	1620	Place		Sealed to parents
Buried		Place		
Spouse		female Dowze		
Married		Place		Sealed to spouse
2 F Elizabeth Fuller				
Born		Place		Baptized
Christened		Place		Endowed
Died		Place		Sealed to parents
Buried		Place		
Spouse		Timothy Wagstaffe		
Married		Place		Sealed to spouse
3 F Mary Fuller				
Born		Place		Baptized
Christened		Place		Endowed
Died		Place		Sealed to parents
Buried		Place		
Spouse		Oliver Webb		
Married		Place		Sealed to spouse

Prepared by	Gladys LaVon (Lowe) Treadway	Address	1104 Kimberly Rd. Unit # 403
Phone	(563) 355-2095		Bettendorf, IA 52722-4111
E-mail address	gltreadway77@outlook.com		
Date prepared	15 Jun 2018		Scott

Family Group Record

Page 2 of 3

Husband Nicholas Fuller (Sir)																																							
Wife Sarah Backhouse																																							
Children List each child in order of birth.		LDS ordinance dates	Temple																																				
4	M Daniel Fuller <table border="1"> <tr> <td>Born</td> <td>1599</td> <td>Place</td> <td>England</td> <td>Baptized</td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Christened</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Endowed</td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Died</td> <td>aft 1620 age 21</td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Sealed to parents</td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Buried</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td></td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Spouse</td> <td colspan="5"></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Married</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Sealed to spouse</td> <td></td> </tr> </table>			Born	1599	Place	England	Baptized		Christened		Place		Endowed		Died	aft 1620 age 21	Place		Sealed to parents		Buried		Place				Spouse						Married		Place		Sealed to spouse	
Born	1599	Place	England	Baptized																																			
Christened		Place		Endowed																																			
Died	aft 1620 age 21	Place		Sealed to parents																																			
Buried		Place																																					
Spouse																																							
Married		Place		Sealed to spouse																																			
5	F Anne Fuller <table border="1"> <tr> <td>Born</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Baptized</td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Christened</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Endowed</td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Died</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Sealed to parents</td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Buried</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td></td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Spouse</td> <td colspan="5">Sir Jo Offeley</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Married</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Sealed to spouse</td> <td></td> </tr> </table>			Born		Place		Baptized		Christened		Place		Endowed		Died		Place		Sealed to parents		Buried		Place				Spouse	Sir Jo Offeley					Married		Place		Sealed to spouse	
Born		Place		Baptized																																			
Christened		Place		Endowed																																			
Died		Place		Sealed to parents																																			
Buried		Place																																					
Spouse	Sir Jo Offeley																																						
Married		Place		Sealed to spouse																																			
6	F Sara Fuller <table border="1"> <tr> <td>Born</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Baptized</td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Christened</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Endowed</td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Died</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Sealed to parents</td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Buried</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td></td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Spouse</td> <td colspan="5">Michael Pindar</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Married</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Sealed to spouse</td> <td></td> </tr> </table>			Born		Place		Baptized		Christened		Place		Endowed		Died		Place		Sealed to parents		Buried		Place				Spouse	Michael Pindar					Married		Place		Sealed to spouse	
Born		Place		Baptized																																			
Christened		Place		Endowed																																			
Died		Place		Sealed to parents																																			
Buried		Place																																					
Spouse	Michael Pindar																																						
Married		Place		Sealed to spouse																																			
7	F Abigail Fuller <table border="1"> <tr> <td>Born</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Baptized</td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Christened</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Endowed</td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Died</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Sealed to parents</td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Buried</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td></td> <td></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Spouse</td> <td colspan="5"></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Married</td> <td></td> <td>Place</td> <td></td> <td>Sealed to spouse</td> <td></td> </tr> </table>			Born		Place		Baptized		Christened		Place		Endowed		Died		Place		Sealed to parents		Buried		Place				Spouse						Married		Place		Sealed to spouse	
Born		Place		Baptized																																			
Christened		Place		Endowed																																			
Died		Place		Sealed to parents																																			
Buried		Place																																					
Spouse																																							
Married		Place		Sealed to spouse																																			

Notes

HUSBAND - Nicholas Fuller (Sir)

Death also listed as 23 Feb 1619 as well as by 26 May 1620 in Prison, tower of London.

Will listed his wife and children. Nicholas Fullers will listed his 2 sons and 5 daughters and who they married.

According to Reference : Gray's Inn Pension book, Volume 1 pg 269 has much info Nicholas who died in prison but no date was given other then Sat in Pension from 1587 to 1619 (not sure this means he died at this time. This info was written up in a few pages of "Who Were The Pilgrims" by Florance Fuller Hyde (copy included.) It has been always stated that Edward Fuller was son of Robert Fuller, butcher in Redenhall, Norfolk, England md to Ann ? and father Robert Fuller and mother Sarah Dunkthorn)

These several pages in this article says Nicholas Fuller, a barrester of Stepney, England (London) was the father of Edward Fuller (who went to US) on the Mayflower with wife Ann and brother Dr Samuel Fuller and sister Ann Susannah Fuller wife of William White. Edward was also a barrister. Records stated that Nicholas had 3 sons, 2 daughters: Edward, Samuel, Mary, wife of William Pinder and Twins, Nicholas and Susannah, wife of William White. * According to his will he did not have those children.

Nicholas went to prison becaused thinking to help his clients. The records of Gray's Inn, one of the ancient Inns of Court, furnished author by the Librarian at Gray's Inn, contain the following information: Re: Nicholas Fuller:

Family Group Record

Page 3 of 3

Husband **Nicholas Fuller (Sir)**

Wife **Sarah Backhouse**

Notes

HUSBAND - Nicholas Fuller (Sir) (Continued)

Admitted to Gray's Inn	1563
Ancient	1574 June 17
Autumn Reader	1587 26 May
Treasurer (Elected)	1590 Nov 19
Dean of the Chapel	1601 Nov 18

Sat in Pension from 1587 to 1619

He was a Reader of Staple Inn.

His Coat of Arms are in the South window of Gray's Inn Hall.

As shown in the attached extract from the Records Nicholas Fuller died somewhere before May 26, 1620.

Reference: The Pension Book of Gray's Inn, Volume 1 pg 237 (which is include here).

Tells of what happend to Nicholas Fuller and where was ordered by Pension that Mrs Pinder, wyfe of Mr Pinder sometime a fellow of this societie and daughter to Mr Nicholas Fuller sometyme a Reader of the same (pension to go to son of Mrs Pinder, grandson of Nicholas, Michael who was deceased and so pension to go to his grandson Samuel Fuller, son of Edward. More on this info will have copy of it.

No mention of who Nicholas's wife was. She was Sarah Backhouse

His will did list all his children which I have a copy included and none of these are his children except he had a son Nicholas who outlived him by 4 months and had a son Nicholas age 2. His will listed all his children and these are not listed so I would have to go by his will even thought the English Law info should also be correct but apparently isn't if you believe his will.

CHILD 1 - Nicholas Fuller

If died 4 months after father in 1619/20 at fathers will was said to be 28 which would be he was born in 1592.

Records say he was born 1577 if d. 1619/20 be 43. so not sure which date is the right one.

CHILD 4 - Daniel Fuller

Born 1599 if age 21 according to fathers will. other brother Nicholas age 28 in 1620 would be born 1592 and not closer to 1579?

[Return to normal view](#)

Johanson Family Tree-Roots spreading from Sweden, Medieval England, Massachusetts, and South Carolina

Entries: 78908 **Updated:** 2017-06-28 21:19:10 UTC (Wed) **Owner:** Susan Johanson
Home Page: [The Johanson-Clark-Metcalf-Beach Family Page](#) *Note: You will leave RootsWeb*

- **ID:** I72817
- **Name:** Nicholas FULLER [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#) [6](#)
- **Sex:** M
- **Occupation:** London mercer
- **Birth:** ABT 1510 in Neat's Hall, Kent, England
- **Death:** 1545 in London, London, England
- **_PHOTO:**
- **File:** C:\Users\SCJ-Len\Documents\Family Tree Maker\Our Johanson Family Tree-Roots spreading from Sweden, Medieval England, Massachusetts, and South Car(4) Media\Med Men4(1).jpg
- **Title:** Med Men4(1)

Father: [Thomas FULLER](#) b: ABT 1480 in Neat's Hall, Isle of Sheppy, Kent, England

Mother: [Margaret CLARELL](#) b: ABT 1482 in Edgecote, Northamptonshire, England

Marriage 1 [Elizabeth STANDISH](#) b: ABT 1512 in Duxbury, Lancastershire, England

Children

1. [Cuthbert FULLER](#) b: ABT 4 SEP 1542 in London, London, England
2. [Nicholas Fuller](#) b: ABT 1544 in Chamberhouse, Berkshire, England

Sources:

1. Author: Church of England. Province of Canterbury. Prerogative Court
 Title: Abstracts of wills in the Prerogative court of Canterbury at Somerset house
 Publication: Name: Church of England. Province of Canterbury. Prerogative Court;
 Repository:
 Name: Google Book

Page: p-94

Text: 1619 20 277 Nicholas Fuller of Chamberhouse with Berks Esq Dat 19 Feb 1619 20 Bur in chancel of Thatcham Ch belonging to my man of Chamberhouse wife Sara furniture of chamber in Chamberhouse where she lodges the chapel chamber wh are and dau Offley lodge are Sir Nicholas Fuller Kt a sealing ring of gold with my arms 2d are Daniel Rd Pinfall of Newbury with Berks butcher lds in Newbury daus Lady Anne Offley and Eliz Wagstaffe Mary Webbe Sara Pindor wid Abigall Fuller brewhou in Newbury now in occ of Gyles Emerson sists Lady Eliz Layghton wid And Susan Odle

wid neph Thos Odle gent her son Eliz Pindor dau of my dau Sara Pindor Eliz Clement dau of my bro Cuthbert Fuller her late husb Jeffery Clement and her son Nicholas Clement stock in Co of Virginia Mr Ralph Fawkenor vicar of Thatcham Mr Stephen Egerton Late preacher in Blackfriars Ch Lond Mr Dodde late preacher at Banbury with Oxford Mr Fenne late preacher in Coventry with Warw Mr Googe preacher in Blackfriars Lond Mr Tomlynson preacher at Shawe co Berks Mr Weekes preacher in Newbury poor in Thatcham and Newbury servt Anne Sidwaye Exors son in law Sir John Offley Kt and neph Frauncis Fuller Esq Overs bros Sir Wm Burlace Kt and Saml Bacchus Esq son in law Timothy Wagstaffe Esq Ids in Speene co Berks form of young John Kinge wch I bot of old John King his fath Saml son of my dau Sara Pinder Ids in Berks and Southton man of Franckes als Warleighe Franckes co Essex Ids in Newbery Speene and Green ham co Berks Whitecross St in St Giles without Cripplegate Lond Michael son of my dau Sara Pinder mess in Ramsey Courte als Rounde Hoope Alley in sd psh of St Giles demised by me to John Allen Ids in Green borowe co Warw called Millfield and Middlecoppes meadow tithes late bot in co Warw my grch Timothy Wagstaffe tent in Newbury lately bot of Philip Coxe man of Morecource Moremalwyns and More Abbess Ids in Romsey etc co Southt son Sir Nicholas Fuller's wife inn called the Katherine wheel in Smithfield Lond oth tents nr whof I have given fee simple to Emanuel College Cambridge Nicholas Fuller Wits Ra Fawconer vic of Thatcham Thomas Dancaster mark John Benefeild mark John Jenynges Cod dat 22 Feb 1619 20 Signed as above Wits Ra Fawconer vic of Thacham Thomas Hatt Pr 21 Mar 1619 20 by Francis Fuller Esq pow res etc Pr 19 May 1620 by Sir John Offley Kt

2. Title: The History of Parliament

Repository:

Name: <http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/>

Page: FULLER, Nicholas (1544-1620), of Gray's Inn, London and Chamberhouse, Thatcham, Berks.

Text: Family and Education

bap. 20 Apr. 1544, s. of Nicholas Fuller of London, Mercer, and Elizabeth, da. of Thomas Standish of Duxbury, Lancs.1 educ. Christ?s Camb. 1560, BA 1563; G. Inn 1563, called.2 m. 18 Jan. 1574, Sarah, da. of Nicholas Backhouse, alderman and sheriff of London,3 2s. 4da.4 d. 23 Feb. 1620.
Offices Held

Reader, Staple Inn 1579; pens. G. Inn 1584, reader 1587, dean of the chapel 1588, treas. (jt.) 1590;5 common pleader, London 1584-1611.6

Commr. sewers, R. Lea 1589,7 oyer and terminer, London 1601-6, Mdx. 1601-6,8 gaol delivery, London 1601-6,9 recusants, Berks. 1602, assurances, London 1603, 1605,10 inquiry into damage done in G. Inn Fields, Clerkenwell Fields, Finsbury Fields and Moorfield, Mdx. 1603,11 charitable uses, London 1604, Mdx. 1605;12 auditor, churchwardens? accts. Chamberhouse, Berks. 1616.13

Commr. bankruptcy, 1605.14

Member, E.I. Co. 1618.15

3. Author: Joseph Jackson Howard, II.d., f.s.a.
 Title: Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica
 Publication: Name: 333;
 Repository:
 Name: Google Book

Page: VOL. 1. 1874., p 326

Text: Mr Nicholas Fuller Esq & Counsellor of r Comon sonne of Nicholas ffuller of the City of London yonger sonne of Thomas ffuller of Neats Hall in r Isle Sheapie in Kent departed this lyfe at his house at Chamber house in the Counties of Berks the 23 of ffebruarie 1619 & was buried in the parishe church of Thacham in y Isle of the same churches belonging to r manner of house He married Sara da of Nich Backhouse & sometymes Sheriffe of London by whome he had issue Nich ffuller Knight sonne & heire of the age of 28 years Daniell 2 sonne of ye age of 21 yeares and 5 daughters Elizabeth eld da married to Timothy Wagstaffe of Warwick Esq and Counsellor at Lawe Anne 2 da married to Sir Jo Offeley of Counties of Stafford Knight Mary 3 da married to Oliver Webb of the Countie Sara 4 da married to Michael Pindar of Graies Inne London Abigail da unmarried Sr Nich ffuller sonne & heire aforesayd married daughter Dowze of y8 elder house of the Douzes of Hampshire by whome he issue Douze ffuller his only childe of y age of 2 years The executors of f will & testament of y said Mr Nich ffuller is S John Offeley K his sonne lawe & Mr ffrancis ffuller of London his nephew FULLER PEDIGREE COMPILED FROM WILLS etc 1 Andrew Fuller Ann Fuller Nicholas Elizabeth John Barbara Thomas died 1540 Margaret Fuller d 1545 Castlemain alias James Standish of Lancashire Frank Ann i Phill ip Elizabeth t Nicholas Sara Backhouse d Jo hn da Fuller d 1619 Bencher of Gray's Inn of Nicholas Back Fuller house Alderman of London Marr 1578 of Elizabeth Sir Cripps or Hopton Sam1 Houghton Ann Osbaldiston Francis Fuller Barbara d 1636 of Barking Essex Henry Osbaston or Osbaldiston Thomas Fuller of Neat's Hall

4. Author: Joseph Jackson Howard, II.d., f.s.a.
 Title: Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica
 Publication: Name: 333;
 Repository:
 Name: Google Book

Page: VOL. 1. 1874

Text: Will of Nicholas of London Citizen and Mercer dated Jan 10 1515 proved Jan 25 1545 To be buried in church of All hallowes London Elizabeth my beloved wife Cuthbert Fuller and Nicholas Fuller my sonnes John Fuller my base son He is given at legitimate in Visitations so that the word is probably used in the sense of bad My brother James Fuller Frank Ann Phillip and Elizabeth children of my late brother Thomas My cousin Ann Fuller daughter of Andrew Fuller My brother John Fuller My cousin Howard My sister Barbara My dere wife Elizabeth Castlemain and again my prudent wife mentions Mark Henry and Bichd Thurston and John Culeston

5. Author: Joseph Jackson Howard, II.d., f.s.a.
 Title: Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica

Publication: Name: 333;

Repository:

Name: Google Book

Page: VOL. 1. 1874.

Text: Will of Thomas Fuller Citizen and Mercer of London dated May 1540 proved Dec 3 1540 Alenger 18 Margaret my beloved wife Witnesses Andrew Fuller John Fuller Nicholas Fuller

6. Author: Ancestry.com

Title: England, Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975

Publication: Name: Ancestry.com Operations, Inc.; Location: Provo, UT, USA; Date: 2014;

Repository:

Name: Ancestry.com

Birth: Abt 1512 in Derby, Lancashire, England

Death: Unknown

Parents:

Father: Thomas STANISH b. Abt 1480 in Derby, Lancashire, England

Mother: Elizabeth STANISH b. Abt 1482 in of Stoddish, Lancashire, England

Marriage: 1 Nicholas FULLER b. Abt 1510 in North's Hall, Kent, England

Children:

1. Elizabeth FULLER b. Abt 1542 in London, London, England

2. Nicholas Fuller b. Abt 1544 in Chamberhouse, Berkshire, England

Source:

1. Title: The History of Parliament

Repository:

Name: <http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/>

Page: Full: 53, Nicholas (1544-1620), of Grey's Inn, London and Chamberhouse,

Trulsham, Berks

Text: Family and Education

Page: 20 Apr. 1544, s. of Nicholas Fuller of London, Mercer, and Elizabeth, da. of

Thomas Stanish of Derby, Leics. 1 s. and Christ: Camb. 1560, BA 1563; G. Inn

1563 called 2 m. 18 Jan. 1574, Serjeant, da. of Nicholas's Education, alderman and

sherrif of London 3 Feb. 1594 d. 23 Feb. 1620

Officer Held

[Return to normal view](#)

Johanson Family Tree-Roots spreading from Sweden, Medieval England, Massachusetts, and South Carolina

Entries: 78908 **Updated:** 2017-06-28 21:19:10 UTC (Wed) **Owner:** Susan Johanson
Home Page: [The Johanson-Clark-Metcalf-Beach Family Page](#) *Note: You will leave RootsWeb*

- **ID:** I72821
- **Name:** Elizabeth STANDISH [1](#) [2](#) [3](#)
- **Sex:** F
- **Name:** Elizabeth CASTLEMAIN aka
- **Birth:** ABT 1512 in Duxbury, Lancastershire, England
- **Death:** UNKNOWN
- **_PHOTO:**
- **File:** C:\Users\SCJ-Len\Documents\Family Tree Maker\Our Johanson Family Tree-Roots spreading from Sweden, Medieval England, Massachusetts, and South Car(4) Media\Med-Woman10.jpg
- **Title:** Med-Woman10

Father: [Thomas STANDISH](#) b: ABT 1480 in Duxbury, Lancastershire, England

Mother: [Katherine STANDISH](#) b: ABT 1482 in of Standish, Lancastershire, England

Marriage 1 [Nicholas FULLER](#) b: ABT 1510 in Neat's Hall, Kent, England

Children

1. [Cuthbert FULLER](#) b: ABT 4 SEP 1542 in London, London, England
2. [Nicholas Fuller](#) b: ABT 1544 in Chamberhouse, Berkshire, England

Sources:

1. Title: The History of Parliament

Repository:

Name: <http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/>

Page: FULLER, Nicholas (1544-1620), of Gray's Inn, London and Chamberhouse, Thatcham, Berks.

Text: Family and Education

bap. 20 Apr. 1544, s. of Nicholas Fuller of London, Mercer, and Elizabeth, da. of [Thomas Standish](#) of Duxbury, Lancs.1 educ. Christ's Camb. 1560, BA 1563; G. Inn 1563, called 2 m. 18 Jan. 1574, Sarah, da. of Nicholas Backhouse, alderman and sheriff of London,3 2s. 4da.4 d. 23 Feb. 1620.

Offices Held

Reader, Staple Inn 1579; pens. G. Inn 1584, reader 1587, dean of the chapel 1588, treas. (jt.) 1590; 5 common pleader, London 1584-1611.6

Commr. sewers, R. Lea 1589, 7 oyer and terminer, London 1601-6, Mdx. 1601-6, 8 gaol delivery, London 1601-6, 9 recusants, Berks. 1602, assurances, London 1603, 1605, 10 inquiry into damage done in G. Inn Fields, Clerkenwell Fields, Finsbury Fields and Moorfield, Mdx. 1603, 11 charitable uses, London 1604, Mdx. 1605; 12 auditor, churchwardens' accts. Chamberhouse, Berks. 1616.13

Commr. bankruptcy, 1605.14

Member, E.I. Co. 1618.15

2. Title: The History of Parliament

Repository:

Name: <http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/>

Page: STANDISH, Thomas (c.1594-1642), of Duxbury, Lancs.

Text: Like many of his family, Standish was a puritan. Indeed, he was distantly related to the puritan lawyer Nicholas Fuller*, whose mother, Elizabeth Castlemaine alias Standish, was an aunt of Standish's grandfather.

My note sister instead of aunt

3. Author: Joseph Jackson Howard, II.d., f.s.a.

Title: *Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica*

Publication: Name: 333;

Repository:

Name: Google Book

Page: VOL. 1. 1874., p 326

Text: Mr Nicholas Fuller Esq & Counsellor of r Comon sonne of Nicholas ffuller of the City of London yonger sonne of Thomas ffuller of Neats Hall in r Isle Sheapie in Kent departed this lyfe at his house at Chamber house in the Counties of Berks the 23 of ffebruarie 1619 & was buried in the parishe church of Thacham in y Isle of the same churches belonging to r manner of house He married Sara da of Nich Backhouse & sometymes Sheriffe of London by whome he had issue Nich ffuller Knight sonne & heire of the age of 28 years Daniell 2 sonne of ye age of 21 yeares and 5 daughters Elizabeth eld da married to Timothy Wagstaffe of Warwick Esq and Counsellor at Lawe Anne 2 da married to Sir Jo Offeley of Counties of Stafford Knight Mary 3 da married to Oliver Webb of the Countie Sara 4 da married to Michaell Pindar of Graies Inne London Abigail da unmarried Sr Nich ffuller sonne & heire aforesayd married daughter Dowze of y8 elder house of the Douzes of Hampshire by whome he issue Douze ffuller his only childe of y age of 2 years The executors of f will & testament of y said Mr Nich ffuller is S John Offeley K his sonne lawe & Mr ffrancis ffuller of London his nephew FULLER PEDIGREE COMPILED FROM WILLS etc 1 Andrew Fuller Ann Fuller Nicholas Elizabeth John Barbara Thomas died 1540 Margaret Fuller d 1545 Castlemaine alias James Standish of Lancashire Frank Ann i Phill ip Elizabeth t Nicholas Sara Backhouse d Jo hn da Fuller d 1619 Bencher of Gray's Inn of Nicholas Back Fuller house Alderman of London Marr 1578 of Elizabeth Sir Cripps or

Hopton Sam1 Houghton Ann Osbaldiston Francis Fuller Barbara d 1636 of Barking
Essex Henry Osbaston or Osbaldiston Thomas Fuller of Neat's Hall

Johanson Family Tree-Roots spreading from Sweden, Medieval England, Massachusetts, and South Carolina

Entries: 71548 Updated: 2017-05-26 21:19:10 UTC (Wed) Owner: Susan Johanson
Home Page: [The Johanson-Clegg-Mason-Booth Family Page](#) [View all data pages](#)

- ID: I72835
- Name: Thomas FULLER 12
- Sex: M
- Birth: ABT 1480 in Neat's Hall, Isle of Sheppey, Kent, England
- Death: 1540 2

Father: Thomas FULLER b: ABT 1442 in Worthington, Essex, England

Mother: Elizabeth JEMME b: ABT 1445 in Kent, England

Marriage: 1. Margaret CLARELL b: ABT 1482 in Edgemoor, Northamptonshire, England

Children

1. Nicholas FULLER b: ABT 1510 in Neat's Hall, Kent, England
2. John Fuller b: ABT 1502 in Neat's Hall, Isle of Sheppey, Kent, England
3. James Fuller b: ABT 1504 in Neat's Hall, Isle of Sheppey, Kent, England
4. William Fuller b: ABT 1506 in Neat's Hall, Isle of Sheppey, Kent, England

Source

1. Author: Joseph Jackson Howard, Ed., F.R.S.
Title: Miscellaneous Genealogies of the English
Publication: Nones, 338
Repository:
Name: Cough Book

Page VOL. 1: 1874, p.325

Text: Mr Nicholas Fuller Esq & Counsellor of r Common weare of Middlesex Fuller of the City of London younger sonne of Thomas Fuller of Neat's Hall in r Isle Sheppey in Kent departed this life at his house at Chamber house in the Chancery of Barks the 23 of February 1519 & was buried in the parish church of Thatcham in y Isle of the same shire belonging to r manor of house He married Sara da of rich Hardhouse & lady was daughter of London by whom he had issue Rich Fuller Knight sonne & heir at the age of 25 years David 2 sonne of ye age of 21 yeares and 5 daughters Elizabeth ad da married to Timothy Wignalls of Warwick Esq and Counsellor at Law Anne 2 da married to Sir Jo Offley of Courtes of Stafford Knight Mary 3 da married to Oliver Webb of the Countie Sara 4 da married to Michael Pinder of Graves in the Countie of Kent da married to Sir Rich Fuller sonne & heir at law

[Return to normal view](#)

Johanson Family Tree-Roots spreading from Sweden, Medieval England, Massachusetts, and South Carolina

Entries: 78908 **Updated:** 2017-06-28 21:19:10 UTC (Wed) **Owner:** Susan Johanson
Home Page: [The Johanson-Clark-Metcalf-Beach Family Page](#) *Note: You will leave RootsWeb*

- **ID:** I72835
- **Name:** Thomas FULLER ¹ ²
- **Sex:** M
- **Birth:** ABT 1480 in Neat's Hall, Isle of Sheppy, Kent, England
- **Death:** 1540 ³

Father: [Thomas FULLER](#) b: ABT 1442 in Markshall, Essex, England

Mother: [Eminelde KENT](#) b: ABT 1445 in Kent, England

Marriage 1 [Margaret CLARELL](#) b: ABT 1482 in Edgecott, Northamptonshire, England

Children

1. [Nicholas FULLER](#) b: ABT 1510 in Neat's Hall, Kent, England
2. [John Fuller](#) b: ABT 1502 in Neat's Hall, Isle of Sheppy, Kent, England
3. [James Fuller](#) b: ABT 1504 in Neat's Hall, Isle of Sheppy, Kent, England
4. [William Fuller](#) b: ABT 1506 in Neat's Hall, Isle of Sheppy, Kent, England

Sources:

1. Author: Joseph Jackson Howard, II, d., f.s.a.
 Title: Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica
 Publication: Name: 333;
 Repository:
 Name: Google Book

Page: VOL. 1. 1874., p 326

Text: Mr Nicholas Fuller Esq & Counsellor of r Comon sonne of Nicholas ffuller of the City of London yonger sonne of Thomas ffuller of Neats Hall in r Isle Sheapie in Kent departed this lyfe at his house at Chamber house in the Counties of Berks the 23 of ffebruarie 1619 & was buried in the parishe church of Thacham in y Isle of the same churches belonging to r manner of house He married Sara da of Nich Backhouse & sometymes Sheriffe of London by whome he had issue Nich ffuller Knight sonne & heire of the age of 28 years Daniell 2 sonne of ye age of 21 yeares and 5 daughters Elizabeth eld da married to Timothy Wagstaffe of Warwick Esq and Counsellor at Lawe Anne 2 da married to Sir Jo Offeley of Counties of Stafford Knight Mary 3 da married to Oliver Webb of the Countie Sara 4 da married to Michael Pindar of Graies Inne London Abigail da unmarried Sr Nich ffuller sonne & heire aforesayd married

daughter Dowze of y8 elder house of the Douzes of Hampshire by whome he issue Douze ffuller his only childe of y age of 2 years The executors of f will & testament of y said Mr Nich ffuller is S John Offeley K his sonne lawe & Mr ffrancis ffuller of London his nephew FULLER PEDIGREE COMPILED FROM WILLS etc 1 Andrew Fuller Ann Fuller Nicholas Elizabeth John Barbara Thomas died 1540 Margaret Fuller d 1545 Castlemain alias James Standish of Lancashire Frank Ann i Phill ip Elizabeth t Nicholas Sara Backhouse d Jo hn da Fuller d 1619 Bencher of Gray's Inn of Nicholas Back Fuller house Alderman of London Marr 1578 of Elizabeth Sir Cripps or Hopton Sam1 Houghton Ann Osbaldiston Francis Fuller Barbara d 1636 of Barking Essex Henry Osbaston or Osbaldiston Thomas Fuller of Neat's Hall

2. Author: Martim de Albuquerque

Title: Notes and Queries

Publication: Name: Published 1860;

Repository:

Name: Original from the University of Michigan

Text: MABKSHALL AND THE FULLER FAMILY.

(See 10 S. ix. 144 ; 12 S. iii. 53 ; iv. 234, 263).

The following facts may be of additional interest. In Misc. Gen. et Her., Fourth Series, vol. iv. pp. 30-5, 1 published a frulwer or ffuller pedigree ; and at p. 66 I added notes from which it appears beyond doubt that, at a very remote date, the Fullers were lords of the manor of Markeshall. To save space I confine my extracts to a summary from the notes only, in which the generations are numbered :

(14) Bic'us de fulwer de Markeshall in com' Essex = Magdalene filse Ric'i Danbye.

(16) Thomas fulwer de Markeshall = Anne une file et here Wilhelmi Bersett, miles.

(16) Thomas fulwer de Markshall = Agnes file et here Henrici Ashewell in Com' Cantabrigii.

(17) Thomas fulwer de Nettes[hall] in Shepey = Erminelde une file et heredu' Benet de Kent.

Members of this branch were at this time also lords of the manor of Neatshall and of the manor of Tempsford, co. Bedford, as proved by the following extracts from the Heralds' College.

Grant of crest to Ralph ffulwar of London,

gent., son of Thomas ffulwar, Esq., lord of
Netes (who was son of Thomas fTulwar, Esq.,

lord of Netes, by dau. and heir of. Benet

of Kent, Esq.), and great -grandsoii of Thomas
ffulwar of Markeshall, co. Essex, Esq.,
Dec. 20, 3 Elizabeth.

Grant of crest to John Fullwer, lord of the
manor of Tempsford, co. Bedford, Esq., and
judge in the Guildhall of the Court of one
of the Sheriffs of London, son of Thomas
ffulwer, lord of Netes in the Isle of Sheppey,

co. Kent, Esq. (by Margaret his wife,
daughter and heir of Nicholas Clarell of
Edgecott, co. Northampton, Esq.), and
grandson of Thomas ffulwar, lord of Markes
Hall in the county of Essex, Esq., Dec. 20,
3 Elizabeth.

Grant of crest to James ffulwarr of London,
Merchant of the Staple and Merchant
Adventurer (brother of John Fulwer, lord
of the manor of Tempsford), Dec. 20, 3 Eliza-
beth.

There is an earlier grant of arms, July 7,
1551, to William ffulwar of Holewell, co.
Hertford, brother of John ffulwer, lord of
Tempsford. But I am travelling beyond
Markshall, and will conclude.

3. Author: Joseph Jackson Howard, ll.d., f.s.a.

Title: Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica

Publication: Name: 333;

Repository:

Name: Google Book

Page: VOL. 1. 1874.

Text: Will of Thomas Fuller Citizen and Mercer of London dated May 1540 proved
Dec 3 1540 Alenger 18 Margaret my beloved wife Witnesses Andrew Fuller John
Fuller Nicholas Fuller

[Return to normal view](#)

Johanson Family Tree-Roots spreading from Sweden, Medieval England, Massachusetts, and South Carolina

Entries: 78908 **Updated:** 2017-06-28 21:19:10 UTC (Wed) **Owner:** Susan Johanson
Home Page: [The Johanson-Clark-Metcalf-Beach Family Page](#) *Note: You will leave RootsWeb*

- **ID:** I72840
- **Name:** Thomas FULLER ¹
- **Sex:** M
- **Birth:** ABT 1442 in Markshall, Essex, England
- **MAP:**
- **LAT:** N51.9
- **LONG:** E0.6833
- **Death:** UNKNOWN

Father: [Thomas FULLER](#) b: ABT 1415 in Mark's Hall, Essex, England

Mother: [Agnes ASHWELL](#) b: ABT 1420 in Cambridgeshire, England

Marriage 1 [Eminelde KENT](#) b: ABT 1445 in Kent, England

Children

1. [Thomas FULLER](#) b: ABT 1480 in Neat's Hall, Isle of Sheppy, Kent, England

Sources:

1. Author: Martim de Albuquerque
Title: Notes and Queries
Publication: Name: Published 1860;
Repository:
Name: Original from the University of Michigan

Text: MABKSHALL AND THE FULLER FAMILY.

(See 10 S. ix. 144 ; 12 S. iii. 53 ; iv. 234, 263).

The following facts may be of additional interest. In Misc. Gen. et Her., Fourth Series, vol. iv. pp. 30-5, 1 published a frulwer or fuller pedigree ; and at p. 66 I added notes from which it appears beyond doubt that, at a very remote date, the Fullers were lords of the manor of Markeshall. To save space I confine my extracts to a summary from the notes only, in which the generations are numbered :

(14) Bic'us de fulwer de Markeshall in com'
Essex = Magdalene filse Ric'i Danbye.

(16) Thomas fulwer de Markeshall = Anne une
file et here Wilhelmi Bersett, miles.

(16) Thomas fulwer de Markshall = Agnes file et
here Henrici Ashewell in Com' Cantabrigii.

(17) Thomas fulwer de Nettes[hall] in Shepey =
Erminelde une file et heredu' Benet de Kent.

Members of this branch were at this time
also lords of the manor of Neatshall and of
the manor of Tempsford, co. Bedford, as
proved by the following extracts from the
Heralds' College.

Grant of crest to Ralph ffulwar of London,
gent., son of Thomas ffulwar, Esq., lord of
Netes (who was son of Thomas fTulwar, Esq.,

lord of Netes, by dau. and heir of. Benet

of Kent, Esq.), and great -grandsoii of Thomas
ffulwar of Markeshall, co. Essex, Esq.,
Dec. 20, 3 Elizabeth.

Grant of crest to John Fullwer, lord of the
manor of Tempsford, co. Bedford, Esq., and
judge in the Guildhall of the Court of one
of the Sheriffs of London, son of Thomas
ffulwer, lord of Netes in the Isle of Sheppey,

co. Kent, Esq. (by Margaret his wife,
daughter and heir of Nicholas Clarell of
Edgecott, co. Northampton, Esq.), and
grandson of Thomas ffulwar, lord of Markes
Hall in the county of Essex, Esq., Dec. 20,
3 Elizabeth.

Grant of crest to James ffulwarr of London,
Merchant of the Staple and Merchant
Adventurer (brother of John Fulwer, lord
of the manor of Tempsford), Dec. 20, 3 Eliza-
beth.

There is an earlier grant of arms, July 7, 1551, to William ffulwar of Holewell, co. Hertford, brother of John ffulwer, lord of Tempsford. But I am travelling beyond Markshall, and will conclude.

Entries: 70008 Updated: 2017-06-28 21:15:10 UTC (Wed) Created: Susan Johanson
Home Page: The Johanson-Cook-Metcalf-Bush Family Page [View This All Family Page](#)

- ID: I72848
- Name: Thomas FULLER
- Sex: M
- Birth: ABT 1475 in Mark's Hall, Essex, England
- Death: UNKNOWN

Father: Thomas FULLER b. ABT 1385 in Mark's Hall, Essex, England

Mother: Anne BERSEY b. ABT 1390 in England

Marriage 1 Anne ASHVELL b. ABT 1400 in Cambridgeshire, England

Children

1. Thomas FULLER b. ABT 1440 in Markshall, Essex, England

Sources:

1. Author: Norton de Ardenne
Title: Notes and Queries
Publication: Henry Thackeray 1850
Repository:
Name: Original from the University of Michigan

Text: MARKSHALL AND THE FULLER FAMILY.

[See 10 S. p. 164 ; 12 S. p. 53 ; p. 234, 253.]

The following facts may be of additional interest. In Misc. Gen. et Her., Fourth Series, vol. iv, pp. 30-5, I published a notice of Fuller pedigree; and at p. 55 I added notes from which it appears beyond doubt that, at a very remote date, the Fullers were lords of the manor of Markshall. To save space I confine my extracts to a summary from the notes only, in which the generations are numbered:

(14) Richard de Fulwar de Markshall in 1601
Excerpt = Magdalene Rose Rich Danbya.

There is an earlier grant of arms, July 7, 1551, to William Fulwar of Hove, co. Hertford, brother of John Fulwar, lord of Tempstord. But I am travelling beyond Markhall, and will conclude.

[Return to normal view](#)

Johanson Family Tree-Roots spreading from Sweden, Medieval England, Massachusetts, and South Carolina

Entries: 78908 **Updated:** 2017-06-28 21:19:10 UTC (Wed) **Owner:** Susan Johanson
Home Page: [The Johanson-Clark-Metcalf-Beach Family Page](#) Note: You will leave RootsWeb

- **ID:** I72844
- **Name:** Thomas FULLER ¹
- **Sex:** M
- **Birth:** ABT 1415 in Mark's Hall, Essex, England
- **Death:** UNKNOWN

Father: [Thomas FULLER](#) b: ABT 1385 in Mark's Hall, Essex, England

Mother: [Anne BERSETT](#) b: ABT 1390 in England

Marriage 1 [Agnes ASHWELL](#) b: ABT 1420 in Cambridgeshire, England

Children

1. [Thomas FULLER](#) b: ABT 1442 in Markshall, Essex, England

Sources:

1. Author: Martim de Albuquerque
Title: Notes and Queries
Publication: Name: Published 1860;
Repository:
Name: Original from the University of Michigan

Text: MABKSHALL AND THE FULLER FAMILY.

(See 10 S. ix. 144 ; 12 S. iii. 53 ; iv. 234, 263).

The following facts may be of additional interest. In Misc. Gen. et Her., Fourth Series, vol. iv. pp. 30-5, I published a fuller or fuller pedigree ; and at p. 66 I added notes from which it appears beyond doubt that, at a very remote date, the Fullers were lords of the manor of Markeshall. To save space I confine my extracts to a summary from the notes only, in which the generations are numbered :

(14) Bic'us de fulwer de Markeshall in com'
Essex = Magdalene filse Ric'i Danbye.

(16) Thomas fulwer de Markeshall = Anne une file et here Wilhelmi Bersett, miles.

(16) Thomas fulwer de Markshall = Agnes file et here Henrici Ashewell in Com' Cantabrigii.

(17) Thomas fulwer de Nettes[hall] in Shepey = Erminelde une file et heredu' Benet de Kent.

Members of this branch were at this time also lords of the manor of Neatshall and of the manor of Tempsford, co. Bedford, as proved by the following extracts from the Heralds' College.

Grant of crest to Ralph ffulwar of London, gent., son of Thomas ffulwar, Esq., lord of Netes (who was son of Thomas fTulwar, Esq.,

lord of Netes, by dau. and heir of. Benet

of Kent, Esq.), and great -grandsoii of Thomas ffulwar of Markeshall, co. Essex, Esq., Dec. 20, 3 Elizabeth.

Grant of crest to John Fullwer, lord of the manor of Tempsford, co. Bedford, Esq., and judge in the Guildhall of the Court of one of the Sheriffs of London, son of Thomas ffulwer, lord of Netes in the Isle of Sheppey,

co. Kent, Esq. (by Margaret his wife, daughter and heir of Nicholas Clarell of Edgecott, co. Northampton, Esq.), and grandson of Thomas ffulwar, lord of Markes Hall in the county of Essex, Esq., Dec. 20, 3 Elizabeth.

Grant of crest to James ffulwarr of London, Merchart of the Staple and Merchant Adventurer (brother of John Fulwer, lord of the manor of Tempsford), Dec. 20, 3 Elizabeth.

There is an earlier grant of arms, July 7, 1551, to William ffulwar of Holewell, co. Hertford, brother of John ffulwer, lord of

Tempsford. But I am travelling beyond
Markshall, and will conclude.

Johanson Family Tree-Roots spreading from Sweden, Medieval England, Massachusetts, and South Carolina

Entry: 72848 Updated: 2017-06-28 21:19:10 UTC (Wed) Owner: Susan Johanson
Home Page: The Johanson-Clark-Metcalf-Brown Family Page [View full record on RootsWeb](#)

- ID: I72848
- Name: Thomas FULLER
- Sex: M
- Name: Thomas FULLER also
- Birth: ABT 1385 in Mark's Hall, Essex, England
- Death: UNKNOWN

Marriage 1 Anna BENNETT b. ABT 1390 in England

Children

1. M Thomas FULLER b. ABT 1415 in Mark's Hall, Essex, England

Source

1. Author: Martin de Albuquerque
Title: Notes and Queries
Publication Name: Published 1850
Repository:
Name: Original from the University of Michigan

Text: MARKSHALL AND THE FULLER FAMILY.

(See 10 S. 4. 144, 12 S. 6. 53; W. 234, 293).

The following facts may be of additional interest. In Hist. Gen. of Mex., Fourth Series, vol. iv. pp. 35-5, I published a fuller or fuller pedigree; and at p. 66 I added notes from which it appears beyond doubt that, at a very remote date, the Fullers were lords of the manor of Markshall. To save space I confine my subject to a summary from the notes only, at which the generations are numbered:

(14) Ric's de Lupar de Markshall in com'
Essex = Magdalen de Rich Cantre.

(15) Thomas Ricar de Markshall = Anne one

[Return to normal view](#)

Johanson Family Tree-Roots spreading from Sweden, Medieval England, Massachusetts, and South Carolina

Entries: 78908 **Updated:** 2017-06-28 21:19:10 UTC (Wed) **Owner:** Susan Johanson
Home Page: [The Johanson-Clark-Metcalf-Beach Family Page](#) Note: You will leave RootsWeb

- **ID:** I72847
- **Name:** Thomas FULLER ¹
- **Sex:** M
- **Name:** Thomas FULWER aka
- **Birth:** ABT 1385 in Mark's Hall, Essex, England
- **Death:** UNKNOWN

Marriage 1 [Anne BERSETT](#) b: ABT 1390 in England

Children

1. [Thomas FULLER](#) b: ABT 1415 in Mark's Hall, Essex, England

Sources:

1. Author: Martim de Albuquerque
Title: Notes and Queries
Publication: Name: Published 1860;
Repository:
Name: Original from the University of Michigan

Text: MABKSHALL AND THE FULLER FAMILY.

(See 10 S. ix. 144 ; 12 S. iii. 53 ; iv. 234, 263).

The following facts may be of additional interest. In Misc. Gen. et Her., Fourth Series, vol. iv. pp. 30-5, I published a fulwer or fuller pedigree ; and at p. 66 I added notes from which it appears beyond doubt that, at a very remote date, the Fullers were lords of the manor of Markeshall. To save space I confine my extracts to a summary from the notes only, in which the generations are numbered :

(14) Bic'us de fulwer de Markeshall in com'
Essex = Magdalene filse Ric'i Danbye.

(16) Thomas fulwer de Markeshall = Anne une

file et here Wilhelmi Bersett, miles.

(16) Thomas fulwer de Markshall = Agnes file et here Henrici Ashewell in Com' Cantabrigii.

(17) Thomas fulwer de Nettes[hall] in Shepey = Erminelde une file et heredu' Benet de Kent.

Members of this branch were at this time also lords of the manor of Neatshall and of the manor of Tempsford, co. Bedford, as proved by the following extracts from the Heralds' College.

Grant of crest to Ralph ffulwar of London, gent., son of Thomas ffulwar, Esq., lord of Netes (who was son of Thomas fTulwar, Esq.,

lord of Netes, by dau. and heir of. Benet

of Kent, Esq.), and great -grandsoii of Thomas ffulwar of Markeshall, co. Essex, Esq., Dec. 20, 3 Elizabeth.

Grant of crest to John Fullwer, lord of the manor of Tempsford, co. Bedford, Esq., and judge in the Guildhall of the Court of one of the Sheriffs of London, son of Thomas ffulwer, lord of Netes in the Isle of Sheppey,

co. Kent, Esq. (by Margaret his wife, daughter and heir of Nicholas Clarell of Edgecott, co. Northampton, Esq.), and grandson of Thomas ffulwar, lord of Markes Hall in the county of Essex, Esq., Dec. 20, 3 Elizabeth.

Grant of crest to James ffulwarr of London, Merchant of the Staple and Merchant Adventurer (brother of John Fulwer, lord of the manor of Tempsford), Dec. 20, 3 Elizabeth.

There is an earlier grant of arms, July 7, 1551, to William ffulwar of Holewell, co. Hertford, brother of John ffulwer, lord of Tempsford. But I am travelling beyond Markshall, and will conclude.



David Nash Ford's Royal Berkshire History

RBH Home
Events
Legends
Places
Buildings
People
Art & Lit
Mail David



Google
Site Search



Nicholas Fuller (1543-1620)

Born: 1543 possibly in Kent or London

Puritan Barrister & Member of Parliament

Died: 23rd February 1620 at Crookham, Berkshire

Nicholas Fuller was the son of Nicholas Fuller Senior of Neat's Hall on the Isle of Sheppey in Kent who was a London merchant. He entered Christ's College, Cambridge in 1560 and, graduating as a Bachelor of Arts three years later, he moved on to Gray's Inn where he was elected a pensioner in 1584 and reader in 1587. It was around the former date that he married Sarah, one of the daughters of Nicholas Backhouse of Cheapside in Middlesex, an alderman and sometime Sheriff of the City of London, and sister of Samuel Backhouse of Swallowfield Park in Berkshire. They had seven children together who, when not in London, were raised at Chamberhouse Castle a Crookham, in Thatcham parish, also in Berkshire.

Fuller was a rising star in the English legal profession and was often employed by the Privy Council in National security matters. He was offered the post of Solicitor-General in Dublin but, thinking this too far from the centre of things, he managed to avoid the appointment, instead becoming Dean of Gray's Inn Chapel in 1588 and their Treasurer three years later. However, he soon began to upset the establishment. In 1590, he defended the Puritan, John Udall, who had been accused of writing a 'seditious book'. He was very forceful and there was almost a riot in the courtroom. The following year, he was thrown in the Fleet Prison along with William Hackett who had been declared, in Cheapside, the 'new messiah and King of Europe' in place of Queen Elizabeth. It is probably that Fuller had offered to represent Hackett. He was kept an open prisoner for five years.

Despite this, with State commissions having dried up, Fuller turned to politics and was elected MP for St. Mawes in Cornwall. He made a name for himself opposing the Government's extension of Recusancy Laws but, after the session was dissolved, he did not return to Parliament until the first parliament of James I's reign in 1604. He then took up his position as the Government's staunchest critic, a place he held for ten years. He spoke up for Puritan ministers deprived of their livings, pushed for strong action against recusant Catholics and presented economic grievances for the London merchants. He argued against duties imposed without parliamentary consent, which he considered illegal, and was prominently opposed to 'purveyance which allowed the King to buy items at reduced prices. In March 1607, working for the committee of privileges, Fuller tried to get the House of Lords to treat the Commons as equals, especially on joint committees.

Fuller was one of those who opposed the union of England and Scotland. In an attempt to to connect with both the fears of merchants and the resentment at the promotion of Scottish courtiers, he made a speech, warning of feuding lairds and impoverished Scottish artisans descending on England. He was not as disrespectful as many thought; for Fuller was mostly concerned with the legal issues involved, particularly the independence of Parliament that was not well established in Scotland.

Fuller's constitutional ideas led him into a prolonged and high profile conflict with the ecclesiastical Court of High Commission. It all began when he defended two men accused of subversive actions against the Church. He considered the court Popish, corrupt and criminal in its actions and took his arguments to Parliament. The MPs supported him and he was proposed as Chairman of the Committee of the Whole House. However, in July 1607, he was detained by the Court at the White Lion Inn in Southwark. The higher Court of the King's Bench eventually allowed the High Commission to charge Fuller with heresy and he was fined £200 and gaoled again, but a writ of habeas corpus meant he could challenge his imprisonment. Fuller's arguments called into question the very existence of the Court of High Commission, as well as the right of Royal prerogative. Ministers were alarmed, but the King's Bench refused to intervene and, Fuller was locked up once more. King James I was convinced that the lawyers were out to destroy the power of his Church and he put pressure on Archbishop Bancroft to pursue the case. Fuller was finally convicted at the end of the November and the Fleet Prison became his permanent home.

Nicholas had triumphed in that he had shown the weak position of the Court of High Commission, which could only be protected by his own incarceration. However, he could do little more from behind bars and so signed a submission. This, his wife persuaded him to withdraw, but a second submission was accepted and he was released in January 1608.

It was not long before Nicholas was in trouble again however. His friends amongst the opponents of the bishops had been printing his arguments and circulating them as illegal pamphlets. Nicholas then argued, in rousing language, that the ecclesiastical courts were technically illegal and opposed to the rules of common justice. He showed great faith in the independence of the judiciary: a fact that had been little tested at this date but, partly thanks to him, would be in the future. The company were arrested, along with Fuller himself, and charged with sedition at the end of February. Fuller was confined to the precincts of St. Paul's Cathedral. His case continued in the Court of Star Chamber, but its final outcome is unknown. By April, he was allowed to practice law once more as long as he confined himself to Gray's Inn. Further action was expected, but no details of this have been found.

Fuller returned to Parliament in 1610, as a respected member and he immediately renewed his conflict with the authorities. He set out his specific ideas on the Royal prerogative, restating that the king, as well as his people, was subject to law, and attacking taxation without Parliament; but his speech was greeted with silence. At the end of the year, he turned on the Court of High Commission again. He continued to oppose the Government for the next four years, but his leading position in Parliament came to an end in the 'Addled Parliament' of 1614.

He remained active in local affairs until he died on 23rd February 1620 at home in Chamberhouse Castle. He was buried in the parish church at Thatcham where he features on a large wall monument in his barrister's gown and accompanied by his wife and seven children. He left money to the poor of Newbury and to two preachers, but his main heir was his eldest son, Sir Nicholas Fuller who, unfortunately, only survived him by four months, leaving his three-year-old son, Dowse, to inherit the family estates.

Nicholas Fuller (lawyer)

Sir Nicholas Fuller (1543 – 23 February 1620) was an English barrister and Member of Parliament. After studying at Christ's College, Cambridge, Fuller became a barrister of Gray's Inn. His legal career there began prosperously—he was employed by the Privy Council to examine witnesses—but was hampered later by his representation of the Puritans, a religious tendency which did not conform with the established Church of England. Fuller was repeatedly in contention with the ecclesiastical courts, including the Star Chamber and Court of High Commission, and was once expelled for the zeal with which he defended his client. In 1593 he was returned as the Member of Parliament for St Mawes, where he campaigned against the extension of recusancy laws. Outside of Parliament, he successfully brought a patents case which not only undermined the right of the Crown to issue patents but accurately predicted the attitude taken by the Statute of Monopolies two decades later.

Returned to Parliament in 1604 for the City of London, Fuller became considered the "leader of the opposition" due to his conflict with the government over policy,^[1] fighting the impositions on currants, the patent on blue starch, and opposing the proposed union with Scotland on legal and economic grounds. In 1607, in what became known as Fuller's Case, he again began challenging the Court of High Commission, and eventually got the Court of Common Pleas under Sir Edward Coke to agree that the common law courts had the power to free imprisoned ecclesiastical prisoners. These encounters with the ecclesiastical courts were described as "bruising",^[2] but by 1610 he was considered an "elder statesman", introducing bills on ecclesiastical reform and the statutory management of customs duties. He continued to sit in Parliament until his death on 23 February 1620.

Sir Nicholas Fuller	
Member of Parliament for City of London	
In office 1604–1611	
Preceded by	Stephen Soame
Member of Parliament for St Mawes	
In office 1593–1597	
Succeeded by	Michael Vyvyan Richard Orver
Personal details	
Born	1543
Died	23 February 1620 Chamberhouse, Thatcham
Nationality	English
Spouse(s)	2 Sarah Backhouse
Children	Elizabeth Nicholas
Alma mater	Christ's College, Cambridge
Profession	barrister, politician

Contents

- Early life and career
- Parliament

Puritanism and patents
Leader of the opposition

Fuller's Case and the Case of Prohibitions

Later career and death

References

Bibliography

Early life and career

Fuller was born in 1543 to Nicholas Fuller of Neat's Hall on the Isle of Sheppey, a merchant from London.^[3] In December 1560 he was admitted to Christ's College, Cambridge, and graduated in 1563, joining Gray's Inn during the same year.^[4] After an initial upset (on 26 May 1579, it was noted that "Mr Fuller, Reader of Staple Inn, is discharged for negligence, and fined £1"), Fuller was highly successful at Gray's; he became Reader on 26 May 1587, Dean of the chapel on 8 February 1588 and Treasurer in 1591. Fuller was a Puritan, and much engaged in their legal and other activities, for example, he arranged a lecturer for St Christopher le Stocks, a church in London, in April 1577.^[5]

From December 1588 he was employed repeatedly by the Privy Council to examine witnesses, and in 1590 was charged with interrogating Sir Thomas Fitzherbert. Although his career had begun promisingly, Fuller soon found himself at odds with the authorities due to his religion, and the religion of those he chose to represent. A favoured barrister of Puritans prosecuted based on their faith, Fuller represented John Udall at Croydon assizes, when Udall was charged with having written *A Discovery of the Discipline*, an allegedly seditious book. The judge instructed the jury to find Udall guilty, and "leave the felony to us"; Fuller protested so vociferously at this that he was forced out of the court.^[6] In 1591, following the collapse of their case in front of the Court of High Commission, Thomas Cartwright and other Puritan ministers were tried by the Star Chamber; Fuller provided legal representation. The case was made more complicated when several of the ministers, on 16 July 1591, "proclaimed Elizabeth deposed, and William Hacket the new messiah and king of Europe"; this certainly was sedition, and saw the ministers confined to Fleet Prison, along with Fuller for offering to represent them.^[6] Cartwright and several other ministers were never convicted, however, which is attributed to "the highly professional resistance of the puritan lawyers [which] perhaps owed much to Nicholas Fuller".^[6] Fuller was confined until 15 August.^[6]

Parliament

Puritanism and patents

Fuller was returned for St Mawes in 1593, apparently thanks to the influence of William Cecil, and immediately began campaigning against government attempts to extend recusancy laws to Protestant splitters from the Church of England. The government introduced two such bills; the second, sent down from the House of Lords on 5 April 1593, was protested down by Fuller as "dangerous to good subjects", because it

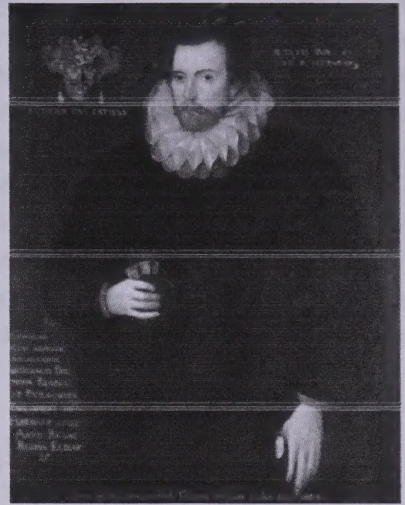
made "schisms to be equal with seditions and treasons, which is against the equity of the former law". According to records, "upon a motion of Mr Fuller's, the whole committee assented to the striking out of the title and the whole preamble. No man spoke for it".^[7] While an MP, Fuller became involved in patents cases, which continued after he left Parliament in 1597.^[7]

Patents were initially intended to provide protection to merchants of new industries, making England an attractive country to conduct business in. The granting of these patents was highly popular with the monarch, both before and after the statute of Monopolies, because of the potential for raising revenue. A patentee was expected to pay heavily for the patent, and unlike a tax raise (another method of raising Crown money) any public unrest as a result of the patent was normally directed at the patentee, not the monarch.^[8] Over time, this became more and more problematic: instead of temporary monopolies on specific, imported industries, long-term monopolies came about over common commodities, including salt and starch. These "odious monopolies" led to a showdown between the Crown and Parliament, in which it was agreed, on 28 November 1601, to turn the power to administer patents over to the common law courts;^[9] at the same time, Elizabeth revoked a number of the more restrictive and damaging monopolies.^[10] One of the monopolies capable of being addressed at the common law was that over playing cards, which was granted to Edward Darcy on 13 June 1600. Darcy, in 1602, began proceedings against a Mr Allen for infringing on this patent.^[11]

The Crown was represented by Sir Edward Coke, then Attorney-General for England and Wales, while George Croke and Fuller appeared for Allen. Coke argued that the Crown had the right to restrict "games of common good", while Croke said that the free trade principles of the City of London rendered the patent invalid. Fuller, however, "stole the show". He stated that only a new trade, or "a new engine tending to the furtherance of a trade that never was used before; and that for the good of the realm, the King may grant him a monopoly patent for some reasonable time until the subjects may learn the same, in consideration of the good that he doth bring by his invention, otherwise not". In this he accurately predicted the attitude taken by the Statute of Monopolies two decades later.^[12]

Leader of the opposition

Fuller did not stand for election to the Commons in 1597; after its dissolution, he was returned for the City of London in the 1604 Parliament of James I. He was highly active in opposing the government, to the point where academics consider him the "leader of the opposition", although this was not a formal title at the time. During his first year, Fuller opposed the impositions on currants, the patent on blue starch, presented a petition on economic grievances (which delayed the passage of the subsidy bill),^[13] supported the restoration of removed ministers and further attacked the powers of the Court of High Commission.^[1]



Sir Edward Coke, Fuller's opponent during the dispute over playing card patents.

In 1606, the government announced plans for a formal union between England and Scotland. This project was treated with great suspicion in the House of Commons, and Fuller took the lead in opposing it. Although he used racist language, saying in December 1606 that "the Scots in other countries are more like pedlars than merchants", this was aimed at drumming up support from xenophobic elements, and Wright concludes he was not himself a xenophobe. His main concern, rather, was over economic issues.^[14] Fuller argued that the Scottish merchants would undercut and impoverish English ones, and that the markets could not handle such an influx, saying that it was "fit that we seek room to place them in before we admit them".^[14] There was also a legal and constitutional element. The proposal was to allow all Scottish citizens, born before or after the union, to become English citizens, exercisable through the Royal Prerogative. Fuller argued that this right was only exercisable by Parliament, and believed that the extension of the Royal Prerogative would lead to future encroachment on the civil liberties of English citizens.^[15]

Fuller's Case and the Case of Prohibitions

In 1607, Fuller began challenging the Court of High Commission yet again, an ecclesiastical court established by the monarch with near unlimited power.^[16] The High Commission was vastly unpopular amongst both common lawyers and Members of Parliament, as the idea of "prerogative law" challenged both authorities. The appointment of Richard Bancroft as Archbishop of Canterbury in 1604 caused the issue to grow in importance; Bancroft's zeal and strictness "could hardly fail to produce an atmosphere in which principles and issues would crystallize, in which logic would supplant reasonableness".^[17] The judges, particularly Sir Edward Coke, began to unite with Parliament in challenging the High Commission. The High Commission tried people for heresy, based on their internal thoughts and private beliefs, in "a trap to catch unwary or ingenuous men - 'an unlawful process of poking about in the speculation of finding something chargeable'".^[18]

In what became known as *Fuller's Case*, Fuller had several clients fined by the High Commission for non-conformity, and stated that the High Commission's procedure was "popish, under jurisdiction not of Christ but of anti-Christ".^[19] For this, Fuller was held in custody for contempt of court. The Court of King's Bench argued that this was a lay matter, while the High Commission claimed it fell under their jurisdiction. In the end Fuller was convicted by the High Commission, although of heresy rather than contempt,^[20] and sent to Fleet prison.^[21] On 6 November 1608, the common law judges and members of the High Commission were summoned before the King and told that they would argue and allow him to decide.^[22] Unable to even argue properly, instead "[standing] sullen, merely denying each other's statements", the group were dismissed and reconvened a week later. Sir Edward Coke, speaking for the judges, argued that ecclesiastical courts only had jurisdiction as long as no temporal matters were involved; once this happened, it became a matter for the common law courts.^[23]

At this point the King's own position in relation to the law, and his authority to decide this matter, was brought up, in what became known as the *Case of Prohibitions*. James stated that "In cases where there is not express authority in law, the King may himself decide in his royal person; the Judges are but delegates of the King". Coke challenged this, saying "the King in his own person cannot adjudge any case, either criminal - as treason, felony etc, or betwixt party and party; but this ought to be determined and adjudged in some court of

justice, according to the Law and Custom of England". Coke further stated that "The common law protecteth the King", to which James replied "The King protecteth the law, and not the law the King! The King maketh judges and bishops. If the judges interpret the laws themselves and suffer none else to interpret, they may easily make, of the laws, shipmen's hose!". Coke rejected this, stating that while the monarch was not subject to any individual, he was subject to the law. Until he had gained sufficient knowledge of the law, he had no right to interpret it; he pointed out that such knowledge "demanded mastery of an artificial reason ... which requires long study and experience, before that a man can attain to the cognizance of it".^[24] Victorious, Coke freely left, and continued to issue writs of prohibition against the High Commission.^[25]

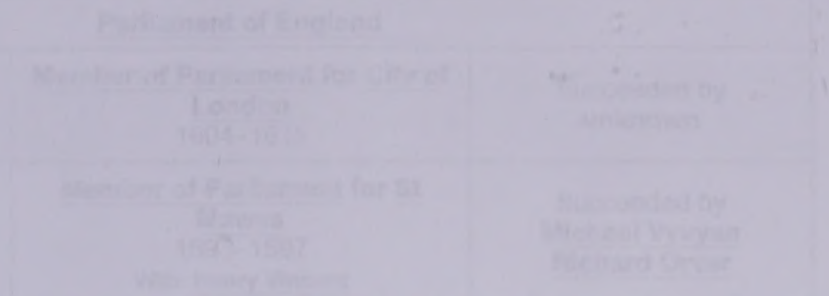
Later career and death

By 1610, Fuller was considered an "elder statesman" within Parliament, "although his influence may have been somewhat weakened by the bruising encounters with high commission and star chamber".^[26] He introduced two bills to reform or remove ecclesiastical committees and courts, which passed in the House of Commons of England on 21 May and 20 June, though both were later rejected by the Lords.^[2] On 3 November he began campaigning to have customs duties put into a statutory framework, again against the Court of High Commission, which, he claimed, as an unelected and autonomous body could not be trusted, but rather Parliament should be given jurisdiction. In a speech on 23 June 1610 he said that "the laws of England are the most high inheritance of the land, whereby both king and subjects are directed and guided". Customs were "not at the king's pleasure to be increased without the consent of the subjects", and "impositions and customs laid on subjects' goods and merchandise...was always done by several acts of parliament".^[26] Wright notes that this was apparently greeted with complete silence, possibly because, while the MPs agreed that civil liberties had been eroded, they felt it was too dangerous to reclaim them.^[26] On 23 February 1620, Fuller died at his home, Chamberhouse, at Crookham in Thatcham, Berkshire^[3] and was buried at the village's parish church^[3] on 2 March. Most of his estate was passed to his wife, Sarah (sister of Samuel Backhouse MP),^[3] and his eldest son, Nicholas,^[27] who died only four months later, leaving a three-year-old son.^[3]

References

- Wright (2006) p.182
- Wright (2006) p.206
- Ford, David Nash (2011). "Nicholas Fuller (1543-1620)" (<http://www.berkshirehistory.com/bios/nfuller.htm>l). *Royal Berkshire History*. Nash Ford Publishing. Retrieved 25 June 2011.
- "Fuller, Nicholas (FLR560N)" (<http://venn.lib.cam.ac.uk/cgi-bin/search-2016.pl?sur=&suro=w&fir=&firo=c&cit=&cito=c&c=all&z=all&tex=FLR560N&syse=&eye=&col=all&maxcount=50>). *A Cambridge Alumni Database*. University of Cambridge.
- Wright (2006:177)
- Wright (2006) p. 178
- Wright (2006) p.179
- Ramsey (1936) p.7
- Pila (2001) p.213

10. Ramsey (1936) p.8
11. Wright (2006) p.180
12. Wright (2006) p.181
13. Usher (1907) p.744
14. Wright (2006) p.184
15. Wright (2006) p.186
16. Bowen (1957) p.252
17. Waite (1959) p.146
18. Bowen (1957) p.256
19. Usher (1907) p.747
20. Cover (1992) p.184
21. Hostettler (2009) p.90
22. Bowen (1957) p.260
23. Bowen (1957) p.261
24. Loveland (2009) p.87
25. Bowen (1957) p.263
26. Wright (2006) p.207
27. Wright (2006) p.211



[https://www.wikidata.org/wiki/Fuller_Nicholas_Fuller_\(lawyer\)](https://www.wikidata.org/wiki/Fuller_Nicholas_Fuller_(lawyer))

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

These cookies are used to enhance navigation, improve site usage, and assist in our marketing efforts. Cookies may be used for analytics and to improve site usage.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

on 16 February 2018, at 16:04.

Bibliography

- Bowen, Catherine Drinker (1957). *The Lion and the Throne*. Hamish Hamilton. OCLC 398917 (<https://www.worldcat.org/oclc/398917>).
- Cover, Robert M.; Minow, Martha; Ryan, Michael (1992). *Narrative, violence, and the law: the essays of Robert Cover*. University of Michigan Press. ISBN 0-472-06495-9.
- Hostettler, John (2009). *A history of criminal justice in England and Wales*. Waterside Press. ISBN 978-1-904380-51-1.
- Loveland, Ian (2009). *Constitutional Law, Administrative Law, and Human Rights: A Critical Introduction* (5th ed.). Oxford University Press. ISBN 978-0-19-921974-2.
- Pila, Justine (2001). "The common law invention in its original form". *Intellectual Property Quarterly*. Sweet & Maxwell. **3** (1). ISSN 1364-906X (<https://www.worldcat.org/issn/1364-906X>).
- Ramsey, George (1936). "The Historical Background of Patents". *Journal of the Patent Office Society*. Patent and Trademark Office Society. **18** (1). ISSN 0096-3577 (<https://www.worldcat.org/issn/0096-3577>).
- Usher, Roland G. (1907). "Nicholas Fuller: A Forgotten Exponent of English Liberty". *American Historical Review*. American Historical Association. **12** (4). ISSN 0002-8762 (<https://www.worldcat.org/issn/0002-8762>).
- Waite, P.B. (1959). "The Struggle of Prerogative and Common Law in the Reign of James I". *Canadian Journal of Economics and Political Science*. Canadian Economics Association. **25** (2). ISSN 0315-4890 (<https://www.worldcat.org/issn/0315-4890>).
- Wright, Stephen (2006). "Nicholas Fuller and the Liberties of the Subject". *Parliamentary History*. Edinburgh University Press. **25** (2). ISSN 0264-2824 (<https://www.worldcat.org/issn/0264-2824>).

Parliament of England

Preceded by <u>Stephen Soame</u>	Member of Parliament for <u>City of London</u> 1604–1611	Succeeded by unknown
Preceded by unknown	Member of Parliament for <u>St Mawes</u> 1593–1597 With: <u>Henry Vincent</u>	Succeeded by <u>Michael Vyvyan</u> <u>Richard Orver</u>

Retrieved from "https://en.wikipedia.org/w/index.php?title=Nicholas_Fuller_(lawyer)&oldid=826340123"

This page was last edited on 18 February 2018, at 16:04.

Text is available under the Creative Commons Attribution-ShareAlike License; additional terms may apply. By using this site, you agree to the Terms of Use and Privacy Policy. Wikipedia® is a registered trademark of the Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., a non-profit organization.



TOPIC TAGS · VIDEO PICKER · LANGUAGE

Search Wikipedia

click links in text for more info



Nicholas Fuller (lawyer) [show article only]hover over links in text for more info

From Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia [show wikipedia page here]
Jump to navigation Jump to search

Sir Nicholas Fuller (1543 – 23 February 1620) was an English barrister and Member of Parliament. After studying at Christ's College, Cambridge, Fuller became a barrister of Gray's Inn, his legal career there began prosperously—he was employed by the Privy Council to examine witnesses—but was hampered later by his representation of the Puritans, a religious tendency which did not conform with the established Church of England. Fuller was repeatedly in contention with the ecclesiastical courts, including the Star Chamber and Court of High Commission, and was once expelled for the zeal with which he defended his client; in 1593 he was returned as the Member of Parliament for St Mawes, where he campaigned against the extension of recusancy laws. Outside of Parliament, he successfully brought a patents case which not only undermined the right of the Crown to issue patents but accurately predicted the attitude taken by the Statute of Monopolies two decades later.

Returned to Parliament in 1604 for the City of London, Fuller became considered the "leader of the opposition" due to his conflict with the government over policy,^[1] fighting the impositions on currents, the patent on blue starch, and opposing the proposed union with Scotland on legal and economic grounds. In 1607, in what became known as *Fuller's Case*, he again began challenging the Court of High Commission, and eventually got the Court of Common Pleas under Sir Edward Coke to agree that the common law courts had the power to free imprisoned ecclesiastical prisoners. These encounters with the ecclesiastical courts were described as "bruising",^[2] but by 1610 he was considered an "elder statesman", introducing bills on ecclesiastical reform and the statutory management of customs duties, he continued to sit in Parliament until his death on 23 February 1620.

Contents

- 1 Early life and career
- 2 Parliament
 - 2.1 Puritanism and patents
 - 2.2 Leader of the opposition
- 3 Fuller's Case and the Case of Prohibitions
- 4 Later career and death
- 5 References
- 6 Bibliography

Early life and career

Fuller was born in 1543 to Nicholas Fuller of Neal's Hall on the Isle of Sheppey, a merchant from London,^[3] in December 1560 he was admitted to Christ's College, Cambridge, and graduated in 1563, joi year.^[4] After an initial upset (on 26 May 1579, it was noted that "Mr Fuller, Reader of Staple Inn, is discharged for negligence, and fined £1"), Fuller was highly successful at Gray's; he became Reader on 8 February 1588 and Treasurer in 1591. Fuller was a Puritan, and much engaged in their legal and other activities, for example, he arranged a lecturer for St Christopher le Stocks, a church in London, in

From December 1588 he was employed repeatedly by the Privy Council to examine witnesses, and in 1590 was charged with interrogating Sir Thomas Fitzherbert, although his career had begun promisi odds with the authorities due to his religion, and the religion of those he chose to represent. A favoured barrister of Puritans prosecuted based on their faith, Fuller represented John Udall at Croydon ass having written *A Discovery of the Discipline*, an allegedly seditious book, the judge instructed the jury to find Udall guilty, and "leave the felony to us"; Fuller protested so vociferously at this that he was for following the collapse of their case in front of the Court of High Commission, Thomas Cartwright and other Puritan ministers were tried by the Star Chamber; Fuller provided legal representation. The case several of the ministers, on 16 July 1591, "proclaimed Elizabeth deposed, and William Hacket the new messiah and king of Europe"; this certainly was seditious, and saw the ministers confined to Fleet Pri represent them.^[6] Cartwright and several other ministers were never convicted, however, which is attributed to "the highly professional resistance of the puritan lawyers [which] perhaps owed much to Nic until 15 August."^[6]

Parliament

RELATED RESEARCH TOPICS

1. Thatcham – Thatcham is a town in the historic county of Berkshire, England, centred 3 miles east of Newbury,14 miles west of Reading and 54 miles west of London. Its population grew rapidly in Thatcham straddles the River Kennet, the Kennet and Avon Canal, the A4 and it is served by Thatcham railway station on the line between Reading and Newbury. Local employment is chiefly in high distribution, retail and public sectors, see also West Berkshire, its district. The area has evidence of dating from prehistoric times and is listed in the Guinness Book of Records as the strongest claim continuously inhabited place in Britain. The well-preserved remains of a Mesolithic settlements dating from 8400 to 7700 BC have been found in its vicinity, evidence also exists of Bronze and Iron A town. The name may have derived from that of a Saxon chief called Tace. The settlement was known as Taceham - ham meaning village in Saxon and it is also possible that the name may have come from Wherever it came from, the name Taceham persisted until after the Norman Conquest in 1066 before going through several changes until the current form was adopted in the 16th century. The town around 1304 when the Chapel of St. Thomas the Martyr on the A4, at that time the population was larger than Newbury's but it declined as a result of the Black Death in 1348. There is a Norman par reconstructed in 1857. This is believed to be built on the site as an earlier Saxon church. It was also known as St. Lukes. In 1121 King Henry I founded the great Abbey of Reading and endowed it w Thatcham Hundred ceased to exist, the part was transferred to Faircross Hundred. Thatcham has a site of Special Scientific Interest just to the south of the town, the name Thatcham is brand-associat security systems issued by the Motor Insurance Repair Research Centre based near the town. On July 20,2007, parts of Thatcham were flooded during a period of sustained heavy rain, about 1' many residents moved out into mobile homes. Thatcham is twinned with, Nideggen, Germany HMS Thatcham, a Ham class minesweeper Thatcham Town Council Thatcham Historical Society

2. Alma mater – Alma mater is an allegorical Latin phrase for a university or college. In modern usage, it is a school or university which an individual has attended, the phrase is variously translated a mother, or fostering mother, suggesting that a school provides intellectual nourishment to its students. Before its modern usage, Alma mater was a title in Latin for various mother goddesses, especie of its current use is the motto, Alma Mater Studiorum, of the oldest university in continuous operation in the Western world and it is related to the term alumnus, denoting a university graduate, which who is nourished. The phrase can also denote a song or hymn associated with a school, although alma was a common epithet for Ceres, Cybele, Venus, and other mother goddesses, it was not frec mater in classical Latin. Alma Redemptoris Mater is a well-known 11th century antiphon devoted to Mary, the earliest documented English use of the term to refer to a university is in 1600, when Univ

Legate began using an emblem for the university press. In English etymological reference works, the first university-related usage is often cited in 1710, many historic European universities have a Latin translation of their official name. The University of Bologna Latin name, *Alma Mater Studiorum*, refers to its status as the oldest continuously operating university in the world. At least one, the *Austria*, the College of William & Mary in Williamsburg, Virginia, has been called the *Alma Mater* of the Nation because of its ties to the founding of the United States. At Queens University in Kingston, British Columbia in Vancouver, British Columbia, the ancient Roman world had many statues of the *Alma Mater*, some still extant. Modern sculptures are found in prominent locations on several campuses outside the United States, there is an *Alma Mater* sculpture on the steps of the monumental entrance to the Universidad de La Habana, in Havana, Cuba. Media related to *Alma mater* at Wikimedia Commons.
 definition of *alma mater* at Wiktionary *Alma Mater* Europea website

3. Christ's College, Cambridge – Christ's College is a constituent college of the University of Cambridge. The college includes the Master, the Fellows of the College, the college was founded by William Byngham. The college is renowned for educating some of Cambridges most famous alumni, including Charles Darwin, within Cambridge, Christ's has a reputation for strong academic performance and 1st place on the Tompkins Table from 1980–2006, as of 2013, it had an endowment of £138 million, making it one of the wealthier colleges in Cambridge. Christ's College was founded by William Byngham obtained the first royal licence for God's House in July 1439. The college was founded to provide for the lack of grammar-school masters in England at the time, the original site of Godshous Kings College, and currently about three quarters of Kings College Chapel stands on the original site of God's House. After the original royal licence of 1439, three more licences, two in 1442 and one in 1448 God's House received the charter upon which the college was in fact founded. In this charter, King Henry VI was named as the founder, in 1505, the college was endowed by Lady Margaret Beaufort and was given the name Christ's College, perhaps at the suggestion of her confessor, the Bishop John Fisher. The expansion in the population of the college in the century led to the building, in the 15th century college buildings now form part of First Court, including the chapel, Masters Lodge and Great Gate tower. The gate itself is disproportionate, the bottom has been cut off to accommodate a river originally built at the very start of the 16th century, was restored in 1875–1879 by George Gilbert Scott the younger. The lawn of First Court is famously round, and a wisteria sprawls up the front of the gate. It is fully built up on only three sides, one of which is formed by the 1640s Fellows Building. The fourth side backs onto the Masters garden, the Stevenson Building in Third Court was designed by J. J. extended in 1905 as part of the Colleges Quatercentenary. In 1947 Professor Albert Richardson designed a new cupola for the Stevenson building, and a second building, Third Courts Memorial Building, also by Richardson, was completed in 1953 at a cost of £80,000. Third Court is also noted for its display of irises in May and June, the controversial tiered concrete New Court was designed by Denys Lasdun in 1966–70, and was described as superb in Lasdun's obituary in the *Guardian*. Design critic Hugh Pearman comments Lasdun had big trouble relating to the street at the overhanging distinctively in aerial photographs, forming part of the northern boundary of the college. An assortment of neighbouring buildings have been absorbed into the college, of which the most notable is the Fellows Building is the Fellows Garden. It includes two mulberry trees, of which the older was planted in 1608, the year as Milton's birth

4. University of Cambridge – The University of Cambridge is a collegiate public research university in Cambridge, England, often regarded as one of the most prestigious universities in the world. Founded by King Henry III in 1231, Cambridge is the second-oldest university in the English-speaking world. The university grew out of an association of scholars who left the University of Oxford after the two ancient universities share many common features and are often referred to jointly as Oxbridge. Cambridge is formed from a variety of institutions which include 31 constituent colleges, Cambridge department of the university, is the worlds oldest publishing house and the second-largest university press in the world. The university also operates eight cultural and scientific museums, including 12 Cambridge libraries hold a total of around 15 million books, eight million of which are in Cambridge University Library, a legal deposit library. In the year ended 31 July 2015, the university had an income and colleges have an endowment of around £5.89 billion. The university is linked with the development of the high-tech business cluster known as Silicon Fen. It is a member of association triangle of leading English universities and Cambridge University Health Partners. As of 2017, Cambridge is ranked the fourth best university by three ranking tables and no other institution in the world has many subjects. Cambridge is consistently ranked as the top university in the United Kingdom, the university has educated many notable alumni, including eminent mathematicians, scientists, politicians, writers, actors, and foreign Heads of State. Ninety-five Nobel laureates, fifteen British prime ministers and ten Fields medalists have been affiliated with Cambridge as students, faculty, by the late 12th century already had a scholarly and ecclesiastical reputation, due to monks from the nearby bishopric church of Ely. The University of Oxford went into suspension in protest, and most scholars moved to the University of Oxford reformed several years later, enough remained in Cambridge to form the nucleus of the new university. A bull in 1233 from Pope Gregory IX gave graduates from Cambridge the *Christendom*, the colleges at the University of Cambridge were originally an incidental feature of the system. No college is as old as the university itself, the colleges were endowed fellowships of scholars institutions without endowments, called *hostels*, the *hostels* were gradually absorbed by the colleges over the centuries, but they have left some indicators of their time, such as the name of Garret H Bishop of Ely, founded Peterhouse, Cambridges first college, the most recently established college is Robinson, built in the late 1970s

5. Gray's Inn – The Honourable Society of Grays Inn, commonly known as Grays Inn, is one of the four Inns of Court in London. To be called to the Bar and practise as a barrister in England and Wales High Holborn and Grays Inn Road in Central London, the Inn is both a professional body and a provider of office accommodation for many barristers. It is ruled by a council called Pension, made up of the Treasurer, the Inn is known for its gardens, or Walks, which have existed since at least 1597, Grays Inn does not claim a specific foundation date, there is a tradition that none of the Inns of Court has the others. Law clerks and their apprentices have been established on the present site since at least 1370, during the 15th and 16th centuries, the Inn grew steadily with great prestige, reaching Elizabeth I. The Inn was home to many important barristers and politicians, most notably Francis Bacon, thanks to the efforts of prominent members such as William Cecil and Gilbert Gerard, Grays Inn four by number, with over 200 barristers recorded as members. During this period, the Inn became noted for the masques and revels that it threw, the Inn continued to prosper during the reign of James Charles I, when over 100 students per year were recorded as joining. Fortunes continued to decline after the English Restoration, which saw the end of the method of legal education. Although now today the smallest of the Inns of Court, Grays Inn and the other three Inns of Court remain the only bodies legally allowed to call a barrister to the Bar, allowing him or her to practise in England and Wales collegiate self-governing, unincorporated association of its members, providing within its precincts library, dining, residential and office accommodation, members of the Bar from other Inns may use the Inn. During the 12th and 13th centuries, law was taught in the City of London, as a result, the existing system of legal education fell apart. The common lawyers migrated to the hamlet of Holborn, near Westminster Hall that was outside the City, the early records of all four Inns of Court have been lost, and it is not known precisely when each was founded. The records of Grays Inn itself are lost until the earliest surviving records, Grays Inn dates from at least 1370, and takes its name from Baron Grey of Wilton, a lease was taken for various parts of the inn by practising lawyers as both residential and their apprentices were housed with them. From this the tradition of dining in commons, probably by using the main hall. Outside records from 1437 show that Grays Inn was occupied by socii, or members Reginald de Gray, the owner of the Manor itself, sold the land to a group including Thomas Bryan. A few months later, the members signed deeds of release. In 1506 the Inn was sold by the Gray family to Elizabeth I, Grays Inn rose in prominence, and that period is considered the golden age of the Inn, with Elizabeth serving as the Patron Lady

6. Privy Council of England – The Privy Council of England, also known as His Majestys Most Honourable Privy Council, was a body of advisers to the sovereign of the Kingdom of England. Its main House of Lords. The Privy Council of England was an institution, advising the Sovereign on the exercise of the Royal prerogative. It issued executive orders known as Orders in Council and also had reigns of the Norman monarchs, the English Crown was advised by a royal court, which consisted of magnates, clergy and officers of the Crown. This body originally concerned itself with advising the administration, later, different bodies assuming distinct functions evolved from the court. The courts of law took over the business of dispensing justice, nevertheless, the Council retained the power to the first instance or on appeal. Furthermore, laws made by the Sovereign on the advice of the Council, powerful Sovereigns often used the body to circumvent the courts and Parliament. During Henry the advice of the Council, was allowed to enact laws by mere proclamation, the legislative pre-eminence of Parliament was not restored until after Henry VII's death. Though the royal Council retained responsibilities, it became an administrative body. The Council consisted of forty members in 1553, but the Sovereign relied on a smaller committee, the Council developed significantly during the reign of Elizabeth I, so that there were real differences between the Privy Council of the 1560s and that of the 1600s. By the end of the English Civil War, the monarchy, House of Lords, the remaining House of Commons, instituted a Council of State to execute laws and to direct administrative policy. The forty-one members of the Council were elected by the Commons, the body was headed by Oliver Cromwell became Lord Protector, and the Council was reduced to between thirteen and twenty-one members, all elected by the Commons. In 1657, the Commons granted Cromwell even greater powers reminiscent of those enjoyed by monarchs, the Council became known as the Protectors Privy Council, its members were appointed by the Lord Protector, subject to Parliaments approval. In 1659, the monarchy, the Protectors Council was abolished, Charles II restored the royal Privy Council, but he, like previous Stuart monarchs, chose to rely on a small committee of advisers. The Acts of Union 1706 brought Scotland into the Kingdom of Great Britain, during the reign of Elizabeth I, the Council is recorded under the title The Queens Majestys Most Honourable Privy-Council. The Sovereign, when acting as known as the King-in-Council or Queen-in-Council, the members of the Council were collectively known as The Lords of His Majestys Most Honourable Privy Council, or sometimes The Lords and the body was the Lord President of the Council, another important official was the Clerk, whose signature was appended to all orders made. Membership was generally for life, although the death of a member dissolution of the Council, the Privy Council of England was one of the four principal councils of the Sovereign

7. Puritans – Puritanism in this sense was founded as an activist movement within the Church of England. The founders, clerics exiled under Mary I, returned to England shortly after the accession of



Fuller Coat-of-Arms.

[After the picture by Edwin White.]
SIGNING THE COMPACT IN THE CABIN OF THE MAYFLOWER.

"Check pg 15-20 appears to be proof
 Sir Nicholas is father of Mayflower Fullers"
 "Records of England"

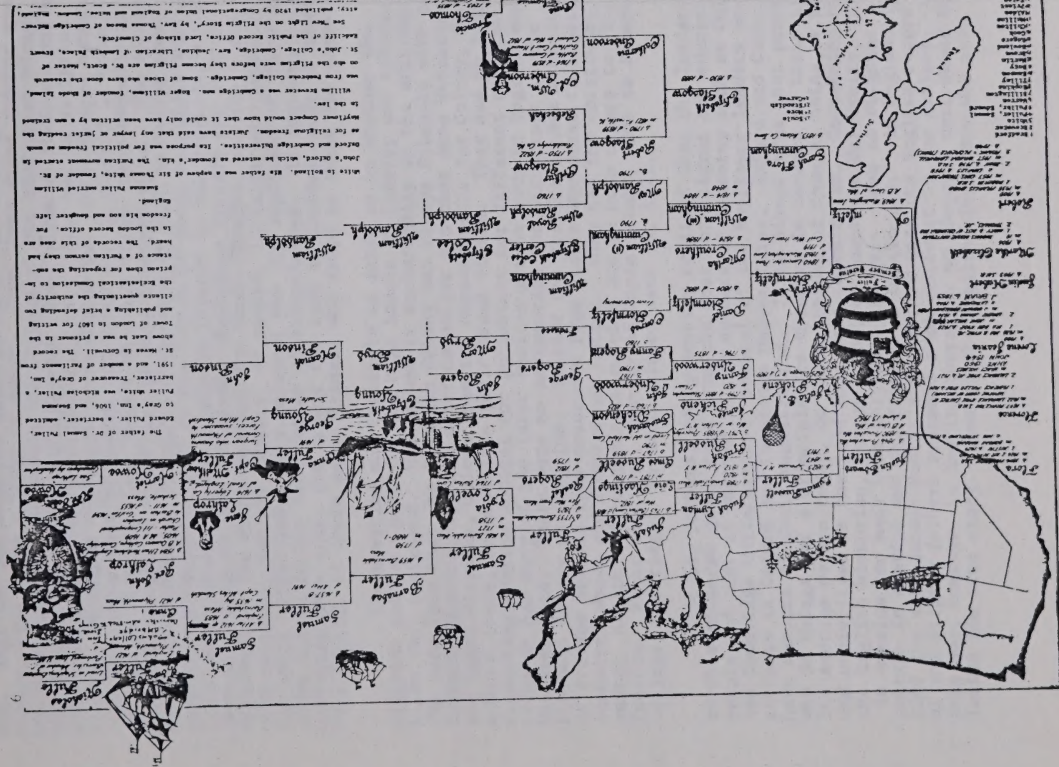
by Florence Fuller Hyde

Everyone knows what the Pilgrims of Plymouth did in 1620 but few have even thought who they were or why there were pilgrims. What motivating forces led the pilgrims to their early settlement in America? What kind of people were they? To understand these people we must realize that the inspiration of the struggle for religious, intellectual and political freedom, which brought the pilgrims to Plymouth Rock, received its first great impetus from the protest of Martin Luther a century before. Medieval Europe, for centuries before his time, was ruled by blind unreasoning force. Feudalism did not tolerate freedom of any kind. Liberty of thought or action, whether political or religious, was ruthlessly suppressed. This was as true in religion as in government. There were, no doubt, intelligent, thoughtful, conscientious people who desired progress, but Martin Luther was the first who had both the courage and the conviction to announce what others thought.

The idea of Freedom which he expressed in a continent just emerging from feudalism produced results perhaps unprecedented in history. In England, Henry VIII took advantage of popular unrest to separate the English Church from the authority of Rome. Although his act had no religious motive, nevertheless this separation and his following excommunication encouraged Englishmen toward independent thought and brought into existence the Puritans.

The influence of new ideas was demonstrated even in the family of Henry VIII. His son, Edward VI, who succeeded him, came to the throne a protestant. One of his tutors was Sir Anthony Cooke, grandfather of Francis Cooke of the Mayflower, a direct ancestor of President Taft. Henry's wife, Anne Boleyn, mother of Queen Elizabeth, studied and induced the King to read Tyndale's New Testament and due to her influence, it was printed by royal permission instead of being passed around the country and distributed secretly. After five years of Edward's reign came "Bloody Mary", who by persecution attempted to restore the authority of Rome. The martyrdom of the early Puritans at this time gave their cause advertisement and advancement, which did much to make it successful when Elizabeth succeeded Mary. On a visit to England, I have stood on the spot in Oxford where as part of her persecution, three Bishops of the Church of England were burned to death. It is marked now by a beautiful memorial monument. Their example of devotion to the cause of freedom even unto death shows us better than anything else why the pilgrims were willing to brave the unknown perils of a new land for freedom of thought. It is inspiring to visit the colleges where those who became the leaders of the pilgrims heard the teachings of men who dared to oppose such persecution. These buildings are today just as they were then, except for the ravages of time and weather, and to visit them gives one a feeling that he is turning back the pages of history.

Although desiring the English Church to be independent of Rome, Elizabeth wished to keep its forms; its ceremonies and its



authority over her own people. The Puritans were reformers who insisted upon purifying and simplifying the rituals and doctrines of the Church and upon accepting as authority only the pure word of God. This won for them the title of Puritans, which given in derision, came to be a badge of honor. Then there arose another group who went further, and became the nucleus of the band which became the Pilgrims of the Plymouth Colony. They began as Puritans but became separatists. They decided that they could not be satisfied with any reform of the established Church but insisted upon nothing less than separation of Church and State and to worship in complete freedom as they saw fit. They took their stand, unequivocally upon the plain letter of Scripture, as they interpreted it. The intensity and zeal of these religious controversies will be better understood if we recognize that at the bottom of these religious innovations was a movement toward greater freedom in all respects, intellectual, religious and political. Religious freedom was only the spearhead of the whole movement for human freedom, and those who were outspoken for any liberty, of course, suffered much persecution for their activities. This movement was the beginning of those ideas later stated in our Declaration of Independence. In England, later centuries have given the credit for love of freedom, even of democracy itself, to those early leaders who dared to think for themselves.

The question may feelingly be asked as to whether the Pilgrims put into practice the high ideals of liberty and tolerance which they professed. The answer is emphatically in the affirmative. The very fact that the Plymouth Colony was always friendly with the Indians, Quakers, and all other Colonists and that Anne Hutchinson and Roger Williams, driven from the Massachusetts Bay Colony, found a haven there, demonstrates their broad vision. They had no laws regulating wearing apparel nor punishment for different religious ideas as had many of the later Puritan groups both in England and Massachusetts. There were no persecution for witchcraft in the Plymouth Colony of Pilgrims. Present day Americans have a heritage of freedom because they descended from people who dared to cross an uncharted ocean and found a new nation. They had the fortitude, energy, health and judgment to survive and to help others to find freedom. Roger Williams, founder of Rhode Island, went to Pembroke College, Cambridge. He matriculated June 25, 1621.

It is, perhaps, not generally realized that the leadership of this advanced group came from the most intelligent and educated people and that it started in the centers of learning such as Oxford and Cambridge Universities. Several of the Mayflower leaders were students in Oxford and Cambridge Universities. Oxford and Cambridge have records of their registration. It is always true that people who do things for a principle are thinkers in advance of their time. The average person today, no doubt, thinks of them as being as rough and unpolished as the land they came to colonize. Concerning this, the English historian, Thomas Mason, of Cambridge University, said "In America too many have only read the references to Pilgrims written in America and the fiction of Longfellow." In England in 1849 the Rev. Joseph Hunter's researches into the English record of the Pilgrim fathers awakened a new interest in the subject. To this day, however, in America there are no adequate text books relating the true story. Some of the English historians who have

compiled and published the works on the subject are: Thomas W. Mason and Rev. B. Nightengale, of Cambridge University, who wrote "New Lights on the Pilgrim Story" and "Digest of Pilgrim Story"; Dr. R. F. Scott, Master of St. John's College, Cambridge; and Dr. P. Gile, of Emmanuel College, Cambridge. There are also works of Librarian of Colchester and English Historical Society, Public Office Record, London; and the works of the Lord Bishop of Chelmsford. This data has all been published in England.

America long neglected to study the English antecedents of the Pilgrims. But the English historians have turned to the heroic pages of the west and the careful English inquirers have related not only pedigrees, but also those noble family traditions, religious associations, and educational influences, which helped to make the Pilgrims and America what they afterward became. It would be well for all the people of America to learn the real status of the Pilgrim fathers in England. It would lead to the highest admiration for the character and ideals of the Pilgrim heroes, and the strengthening of the bonds of all English-speaking people. The passengers of the Mayflower numbered in all 102. Of these 41 were men whose names were signed to the Mayflower compact, the first document in history establishing a government by the consent of the governed. The first principle of self-government is government of self. This was the ideal of the passengers of the Mayflower when they signed the solemn compact binding themselves not only to make wise and just laws but to obey them themselves. This is the basic principle of our American Constitution. Able jurists say that this document could have been written only by a man trained in the law. One can see today in Geneva this Mayflower compact carved in stone as a part of a memorial to the Union of the Swiss Cantons. This striking memorial is made out of a part of the old city wall and other great documents of freedom adopted by different nations are also carved there. The Swiss chose the Mayflower compact as the representative document of American liberty.

Among the leaders of the Pilgrims who came on the Mayflower and whose names are subscribed on the Mayflower compact were William Bradford, Edward Winslow, Francis Cooke, Edward Fuller, Samuel Fuller, William White, Richard Warren, Thomas Rogers and William Brewster. We have, perhaps, gained a false impression from the use of the term "Pilgrim Fathers". They were young men, not graybeards. All but two of them were under 40 years of age. John Carver, William Bradford and Edward Winslow (age 25) are well known as Governors of the Colony. Francis Cooke was the grandson of Sir Anthony Cooke of Gideon Hall, tutor of King Edward VI. At the Hall where Francis was born, his grandfather, Sir Anthony Cooke, had entertained Queen Elizabeth of England and Marie De Medici of Italy. Sir Anthony also had three daughters, Mildred, who married Lord Burleigh, Treasurer of England, Anne became Lady Bacon and mother of Lord Bacon, Elizabeth, who married Lord John Russell. Francis Cooke, the Pilgrim of the Mayflower, was the son of Richard Cooke, oldest son of Sir Anthony Cooke. In the will of Richard Cooke, he leaves a large estate to his family and to his niece, the Countess of Oxford. Sir Anthony Cooke was Treasurer of St. John's College, Cambridge. The record shows that Francis was a student there in 1592 and entered as founder's kin. President William Howard Taft, Winston Churchill and Franklin Roosevelt were his descendants.

Family Group Record

which is not right.

Page 2 of 5

Husband Sir Nicholas Fuller

Wife Female ?Unknown

This info was from info of Nicholas Fuller

Notes

HUSBAND - Sir Nicholas Fuller

According to Reference : Gray's Inn Pension book, Volume 1 pg 269 has much of Nicholas who died in prison but no date was given other then Sat in Pension from 1587 to 1619 (not sure this means he died at this time. This info was written up in a few pages of "Who Were The Pilgrims" by Florance Fuller Hyde (copy included.) It has been always stated that Edward Fuller was son of Robert Fuller, butcher in Redenhall, Norfolk, England md to Ann ? and father Robert Fuller and mother Sarah Dunkthorn)

These several pages in this article says Nicholas Fuller, a barrester of Stepney, England (London) was the father of Edward Fuller (who went to US) on the Mayflower with wife Ann and brother Dr Samuel Fuller and sister Ann Susannah Fuller wife of William White. Edward was also a barrister. Records stated that Nicholas had 3 sons, 2 daughters: Edward, Samuel, Mary, wife of William Pinder and Twins, Nicholas and Susannah, wife of William White.

Nicholas went to prison becaused thinking to help his clients. The records of Gray's Inn, one of the ancient Inns of Court, furnished author by the Librarian at Gray's Inn, contain the following information: Re: Nicholas Fuller:

Admitted to Gray's Inn 1563
Ancient 1574 June 17
Autumn Reader 1587 26 May
Treasurer (Elected) 1590 Nov 19
Dean of the Chapel 1601 Nov 18
Sat in Pension from 1587 to 1619
He was a Reader of Staple Inn.
His Coat of Arms are in the South window of Gray's Inn Hall.

As shown in the attached extract from the Records Nicholas Fuller died somewhere before May 26, 1620.

Reference: The Pension Book of Gray's Inn, Volume 1 pg 237 (which is include here).

Tells of what happend to Nicholas Fuller and where was ordered by Pension that Mrs Pinder, wyfe of Mr Pinder sometime a fellow of this societie and daughter to Mr Nicholas Fuller sometyme a Reader of the same (pension to go to son of Mrs Pinder, grandson of Nicholas, Michael who was deceased and so pension to go to his grandson Samuel Fuller, son of Edward. More on this info will have copy of it.

No mention of who Nicholas's wife was. But if his children is right they are not the children of Robert Fuller and Sarah Dunkthorn.

CHILD 1 - Edward Fuller

Edward Fuller was a barrister as was his father Sir Nicholas Fuller of Stephny England
1607 Nicholas was imprisoned in Tower of London.

Some info of Edward is right - but he was not the son of this Nicholas

CHILD 2 - Edward Fuller *

From Gray's Inn Pension Book, Volume 1 pg 269 Listed info that says Edward Fuller was son of Nicholas Fuller according by pension that Mrs Pinder, wyfe of Mr Pinder sometime a fellow of this societie and daughter to Mr Nicholas Fuller, sometime a Reader of the same having heretofore obtayned an order of Pension that her sonne Michael Pinder shall have a chamber allotted to him when he should be of this house the said Michael being now dead before he was admitted she now requesteth that her sonne Samuel Pinder being now the sonne of the said Mr Minder and grandchild of the said Reader might be admitted of this house without fine and that a convenient Chamber (might by favour of this society) be bestowed on him. Whereunt this Pension will ingly yelded and did admitt his gratis and it is ordered that the Tresorer for the tym being shall allot unto him a convenient chas??? in like manner as his brother Michael should have had (by former order) if he had lived? Nicholas issued an order of Pension that his grandson Samuel Fuller, son of Edward, when he should be of the house shall have a convenient chamber.

Note: The Pension books are the true record of all meetings of Pension covering the years 1596 to 1800.

Edward Fuller - son of Nicholas Fuller (admitted to Gray's Inn) was a barrister, who lived in Stephney, one of the residential quarters of London. (See "New Light on Pilgrims story" by the Rev. Thomas W. Mason, London, Congregational Union of England and Wales, Inc. Memorial Hall, E.C. 4, Rayleigh, Essex.) The wife of Edward was Anne. They had two sons Matthew and Samuel born in England.

In the year of his father's release from the Tower, Samuel, together with his sister Susannah, wife of William White and brother Edward trained in the law as his father was, left Stepheney for Holland. This departure was made at the same time as that of the Nottinghamshire group. There may have been connecting links. We note, for example that William Brewster, of Scrooby, as Secretary to Davison had spent some time in London and that the brothers Hamerton of Nottingham were afterwards in London.

Family Group Record

Page 3 of 5

Husband Sir Nicholas Fuller

Wife Female ?Unknown

Notes

CHILD 2 - Edward Fuller * (Continued)

In Holland, the exiles had to take to samual labour, Samuel Fuller became a weaver, nor was the physician the only professional man to burn mechanic in furtherance of the great cause, during the twelve years that he lived there he was twice married, first to Agnes carpenter and afterwards to Bridget Lee, who survived him,. He was deacon of the Leyden Church where John Robinson was Pastor.

This little family party embarked on the Mayflower at Plymouth, England. First comes the doctor, then sister Susannah or "Anna" as she was generally called, with her husband, William White and a son, next brother Edward, his wife Ann and their boy Samuel, Samuels wife Bridget, joined the Pilgrims some time after. We shall meet with Susanna again as wife of Governor Winslow but for the present they are a family party of seven, with several other relatives. The old father had been dead some time; but perhaps there would be there Susannah's TWIN BROTHER, NICHOLAS, the Snows, the Saffins, who were to follow later, and other good Stepheney folk to wish them "good-bye.

Edward was baptized in Redenhall 4 Sep 1575, said to be the son of Robert Fuller the Butcher of Redenhall. Now some researchers are saying there may not be as much proof that Edward was the son of Robert the butcher as first thought. (Mar 2005)

No record of a marriage but has been stated several instances he married Ann (?) maybe about 1602 at least, when 1st son was said to have been born. No proof of who his wife was. One source did venture to say her name was Ann Hall, only place this was from the "Fuller-Dunham Genealogy" by Robert W. Dunham pub. 1990. (he also stated mother of Edward was Frances and this not right).

Pedigree chart of Jim L. Fuller of Montana listed Edwards wife as maybe Anne Hopkins? Married abt 1612 but would have been earlier then that.

Info from the book Hudson And Mohawk Genealogical And Family Memoirs Vol 1 pub 1911 pg169 has this to say on Edward Fuller.

It is not known if he was one of the band that because of the persecutions in the time of Queen Elizabeth for religious belief, sailed to Holland in 1608 where they settled in Amsterdam and a year later were located in Leyden until they embarked on the "Speedwell" which left Delifhaven, Holland, about 1 Aug 1620. Other research appears that is is more likely that he joined the others on the arrival of the "Speedwell" at Southampton, where they joined the "Mayflower" and Aug 15, 1620, the two vessels started to cross the Atlantic, but the Speedwell, proving unseaworthy, was forced to turn back

The last assumption would account for why they may have left their son in England to come to the US later. Unless they were in Holland and still left the child in England before coming to US. Other situation makes more sense but why bring the younger child and leave the older one in England? His brother Dr. Samuel Fuller did go to Leyden Holland and sailed from there and came to US on the Mayflower with Edward and wife.

They went from England to Leyden, Holland and was there a few years before he became one of the signers of the Mayflower Compact and started from Leyden on the ship

Edward died between 11 Jan and 10 Apr 1621 in Plymouth. Buried in the OLD CEM. at Plymouth, MA His wife died early 1621 wich left the child Samuel Fuller who was raised by his Uncle Dr. Samuel Fuller.

Several sources have written articles on Edward and Ann Fuller and son Samuel and brother Dr Samuel Fuller since they all came on the Mayflower.

Family Group Sheets from Salt Lake City.

The book "Signers of The Mayflower Compact" by Annie Haxton pub 1968 pg 67 has article on Edward Fuller, 21st Signer of compact. This article mostly of son Samuel and Uncle Samuel though. Here also was stated Mathew Fuller who came later abt 1640 with his wife and 3 children was son of Edward and Ann Fuller. He was listed as Dr. Mathew Fuller.

"The Mayflower Families Thru 5 Generations" by Radasch pg 49 to 92.

"The Mayflower And Her Log" by Ames several pages with maps also.

Family Group Record

Page 4 of 5

Husband Sir Nicholas Fuller

Wife Female ?Unknown

Notes

CHILD 2 - Edward Fuller * (Continued)

"Who Were The Pilgrims" by Hyde pg 7 to 20 and 24 to 33 (need more pages)

"The Truth About The Pilgrims" by Stoddard many pages (need pages 162-163)

"Colonial Families Of USA" pg 206 Vol 7.

"The English Ancestry & Homes Of Pilgrim Fathers" by Banks pg 55-56.

"Gen Register" by Farmer pg 115.

"Gen Register of Plymouth Families" by Davis pg 112 to 117.

"Founders & Patriots" by Colket pg 115.

"Gen Dictionary of New England" by Savage p?.

Direct from Redenhall, Norfolk, England, copied by Ministers daughter and American Pub. H. Vol 55 pg 411-410.

"Wool Crompers" by J. L. Fuller pub 1990. This book is written in story form and is very interesting. Also sent a pedigree chart going back to the first William Fuller born bef 1480 in England. Jim Fuller descends thru the Matthew Fuller line and he has pretty well established that Matthew was the son of Edward and Ann Fuller.

"An Ancestral Chart and Handbook" by Olive Barrick Rowland located at the Ft Wayne, IN library #929.2 Su8774r a chart and pg 123-124.

"Mayflower Births & Deaths" Vol 1 by Susan E. Roser pub 1992 located at the Davenport, IA library # 974.4 Ros. pg 450 to 468.

"Penobscot Pioneers" by Philip Howard Gray pub 1993 pg 62-66 devoted to Edward Fuller and family.

For the first time there is quit a controversy about what happend to Ann Fuller, Edwards wife. All other sources have said she died when Edward did just shortly after coming to America but this author believes he has info from the Leach line of his that went back to Ann Fuller and she didn't die but went back to England to get rest of their children and Sarah being one of them that md Richard Leach and he was adm. to Ann's will in Salem MA in 1662. There doesn't seem to be another Ann Fuller that fits the info from this lady and this author thinks she didn't die and had more children before coming to America and left them in England then brought them to Salem. Believing that the info Bradford supplied was many years after the fact and he could have been wrong about Ann Fuller's death. First one to ever look at this as such. Maybe because everyone assumed Bradford was right and no one looked for Ann until this oral will surfaced in 1662 Sarah Leach listed. Her husband Richard as administrator. His thoughts for Edward and Anns children were: Matthew born ca 1610 (where others have stated 1603 as birth date) Left in England to care for his younger siblings, yet Samuel went to America with parents born abt 1612, Robert born abt 1614 (could be named for father of Edward), Edward Jr born ca 1616 and Sarah born about 1618. Samuel named for his fathers brother, Dr. Samuel. He thinks Ann was born abt 1583 and died 1662 at age abt 79.

He has come across some court records of Samuel and Robert Fuller and Edward Fuller who he thinks are only the right age to be sons of Edward and Ann Fuller. However he doesn't list the wives maiden name as few sources have listed Edward married to Ann Hopkins in 1605 in Redenhall Co. Norfolk, England. He also thinks Edward wasn't in Leiden, Holland, at least for very long before boarding Mayflower to come to America like some of the people who had been living in Holland for a while before coming.

He thinks Sarah Fuller named in her mothers oral will, bore children between 1648 & 1661, so could have been born ca 1618 which would make her age 29 when she married Richard Leach and about 43 when her last child was born. Her husband was adm of mothers estate in Salem (The Probate Records of Essex Co., MA 1916 v 1 389). Her husbands brother John Leach, near whom he lived, married Sarah, a dau of Roger Conant. Believe Conants, Leaches & Fullers connected.

Elizabeth Overman of FL (Mar 2005) sent me some info she had collected from the freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.com by Doyle that also listed the maiden name of Anne Hopkins. Also said born ca 1581 and died 1621 and buried in the Coles Hill, Plymouth, MA cemetery. (no stones)

Elizabeth thinks Doyle has done a lot of research and appears to her to be more accurate then some but again, did they do the research or just copied it from other sources? This info she found in 2002.

Family Group Record

Page 5 of 5

Husband Sir Nicholas Fuller

Wife Female ?Unknown

Notes

CHILD 2 - Edward Fuller * (Continued)

"The Pilgrim Migration" Immigrants to Plymouth Colony 1620-1633 by Robert Charles Anderson pub 2004 with the Great Migration Study Project, New England Historic Gen. Soc has much also on Edward Fuller and family and again no mention of Ann's maiden name but does list her death as 1621 and also tells of book by Philip Gray who contends she did not die and more children attributed to them then first thought but Anderson didn't delve into that info in depth.

He stated his origin was Leiden, Holland and first residence in Plymouth. Estate in 1623 Plymouth division of land Samuel Fuller Jr. received 3 acres as a passenger on the Mayflower, which would allocate for himself and his father and mother who died at Plymouth during the first winter. Each person to receive an acre of land. If his mother didn't die then how did he get 3 acres and not 2?

He also states Edward and Ann md abt 1605. He also does not list maiden name of Matthew's wife Frances. Where others have listed name as Iyde or Hyde.

Bradford stated in 1651 listing the families came on the Mayflower as Edward and Ann and their son Samuel Fuller.

Anderson also stated the evidence that Edward Fuller resided in Leiden prior to coming to New England was published in 1985 by Jeremy D. Bangs. (MQ 51:58, citing "R.A. 79, L, folio 172 verso")

The question of parenty of Matthew Fuller was examined exhaustively by Bruce C. MacGunnigle, Robert M. Sherman and Robert S. Wakefield in 1986 and all came to conclusion that Matthew was son of Edward Fuller. However the evidence that Edward was son of Robert Fuller of Redenhall was not so strong as might be desired. Maybe more research there.

Anderson also stated that Philip Gray employs a style of logic and argumentaiton not normally found in the genealogical literature, and his conclusions are not adopted here. (meaning maybe they aren't as clear on children of Edward Fuller as Gray thinks.-GLT)

Husband Sir Nicholas Fuller
Wife Female Unknown

Plans are in progress for a reunion of descendants of Edward Fuller who came to America on The Mayflower in 1620. This notice is being sent to you because you are one of those descendants. However, since many of us have never met, we are going to call it

A FULLER DESCENDANT RENDEZVOUS

and it will be held at

WHITE SULPHUR SPRINGS, MONTANA

AUGUST 3 and 4, 1996

Detailed plans will be available early in 1996 and will be mailed to anyone upon request. When requesting detailed plans, please include a self-addressed stamped envelope or 50¢ to help with the cost of mailing. Please pass the word to your relatives or anyone else you think might be interested. Also, please notify as early as possible if you plan to attend.

JIM FULLER

698 Hwy. 360
WHITE SUL. SPGS. MT 59645
Ph. 406-547-2154